



GC NOVELS

# ***Table of Contents***

Illustrations

Prologue

Chapter 1 – Now in the Middle of Cheating!

Chapter 2 – Temporary Homecoming

Chapter 3 – Kick Out the Five Idiots!

Chapter 4 – Barriere House of the Six Great Nobles

Chapter 5 – Dense

Chapter 6 – The Destined Person

Chapter 7 – Collar

Chapter 8 – The Returning Five Idiots

Chapter 9 – Former Crown Prince

Chapter 10 – Villain

Chapter 11 – Bride Robber

Chapter 12 – Ordinary Day

Epilogue

Afterword

Short Story – Marie Route The Third

Credits

*Download all your fav Light Novels at*

Just Light Novels

## ***Illustrations***

GC NOVELS

三嶋与夢  
イラスト／孟達

正々堂々に敵世界は  
世界です 05

THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS A TOUGH FOR MOBS.





アルベルク

ロイク

ユリウス

コーデリア

ルイーゼ

ノエル

レリア

リオン

ユメリア

マリエ

「リオンさん、まずは  
お住まいのチェックですよ」

いつたい俺が  
何をしたといいうのか!

「逃げられると  
思わないことだ」

セイバーゲームは  
世界は  
恋する世界 05

THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS A TOUGH  
ONE FOR BOYS



**プロローグ** ..... 007**第01話 「浮気中なう！」** ..... 035**第02話 「一時帰国」** ..... 057**第03話 「五馬鹿を叩き出せ！」** ..... 079**第04話 「六大貴族バリエル家」** ..... 106**第05話 「鈍感」** ..... 131**第06話 「運命の相手」** ..... 159**第07話 「首輪」** ..... 185**第08話 「帰ってきた五馬鹿」** ..... 214**第09話 「元王太子」** ..... 237**第10話 「悪役」** ..... 265**第11話 「花嫁泥棒」** ..... 287**第12話 「日常」** ..... 326**エピローグ** ..... 360

# **Prologue**

## **Part 1**

Around the time August was going to arrive.

I, Leon Fou Bartfalt who was studying abroad at Alzer(アルゼル) Commonwealth was stretching myself while sitting on a chair inside the academy's class.

「It's finally over~」

It had become evening. The scenery outside the window looked beautiful with the orange color of the sunset.

The mental bias from being liberated from the supplementary lessons also affected my mind to make the scenery today looked much more beautiful.

Inside the classroom, other than me there were also the members from Hohlfahrt Kingdom who came here to study abroad.

「Haa~, we finally can have summer vacation too.」

Marie Fou Raffan(マリエ・フォウ・ラーファン) slumped down without looking happy at all.

I thought her tension would rise up because she had returned to become a student and could experience summer vacation again, and yet she was like this.

The one who consoled Marie who was in that state was Cara Fou Wayne(カラ・フォウ・ウェイン).

Unlike the petite Marie, she had an average stature and straight long hair with navy blue color.

「Marie-sama, you aren't happy even though we can finally enjoy the summer vacation?」

Marie turned her gaze toward the group of five who were cheerfully conversing inside the class in respond to Cara's question.

Over there were the five idiots—aka our fellow overseas students from the kingdom.

「A holiday without any prior plan is really a fresh experience.」

The one who said that was Julius Rafa Hohlfahrt(ユリウス・ラファ・ホルファート).

The prince with blue short hair was talking about the summer vacation with a smile.

「There were a lot of things at the previous summer vacation. Does your highness perhaps some kind of plan?」

The one who asked Julius that was Jilk Fia Marmoreal(ジルク・フィア・マーモリア).

He was Julius's foster brother—someone who was raised together with him since they were little to be special master and servant.

「What are we going to do to pass the month from now?」

Greg Fou Seberg(グレッグ・フォウ・セバーグ) was worrying about how to spend the summer vacation.

These guys were former noble youths.

Originally even in summer vacation their schedule would be packed due to their position.

But, right now their families had given up on them and they became free.

They seemed to be happy about that and were looking forward to the summer vacation.

Even Chris Fia Arclight(クリス・フィア・アークライト) who was normally not talking much and composed were getting excited talking about the summer vacation with Greg.

「I'm interested with the commonwealth's weapon, so I want to have a little trip to look around for weapons. It'll be great if there is a museum or something like that here.」

Visiting museum in the summer vacation, what a refined way of spending a vacation.

If it was me at my previous life—before I reincarnated into this world of that otome game, I would surely spend the vacation by slovenly doing nothing.

The last of them, Brad Fou Field(ブラッド・フォウ・フィールド) made a suggestion to the four.

「All of you still don't have any plan? Then how about renting an airship and go on a cruise in the commonwealth?」

As expected, these guys were really rich that even word like cruise was coming out.

An invitation to go on a cruise was made so casually like when commoner was saying *Let's go have a picnic!*

Julius's eyes brightened.

「That's nice idea. We're already studying abroad in Alzer Commonwealth, so it's not a bad idea to go sightseeing. If we have a month, we will be able sightsee all over this country in general even if it'll be somewhat hurried.」

This guy, was he planning to use the whole month just for sightseeing?

That was a really elegant way to use summer vacation.

—But it was pointless.

When my gaze returned to Marie, her eyes were cold in contrast to these five due to her knowledge of the reality.

Cara was flustered in front of Marie's cold gaze.

「I-is something wrong Marie-sama?」

「Cara, do you think we will be able to enjoy the vacation in our position as those five's caretaker? Until now there is no need to worry about lunch because we have school, but we're going to have to look after those five from morning until night starting tomorrow.」

Marie's expression was really chilling.

Only children would be happy by summer vacation, but parent with children would have their hands full.

Even though they had time where their children weren't home until now, but come vacation the children would be at home from morning until night every day.

Any mother whether they were fulltime housewife or mother with job would have their hands full—Marie had that kind of expression.

It seemed that right now for Marie those five were children that had to be looked after.

Marie made a dry chuckle.

「Ufufufu—we'll need to prepare lunch too starting tomorrow. What now, the food cost is going to pile up.」

This was the fate of the woman who reincarnated into the world of that otome game and aimed for reverse harem.

Seeing how Marie who was my little sister from the previous life ended up like this, it made me wonder how she ended up to be this sad.

I didn't think that Marie could be pitied because she brought this on herself.

I didn't but, seeing my little sister who aimed for a reverse harem—and ended up having to support five troublesome men, it was a fact that I felt a bit of pity for her.

But, it was a little funny.

In her current situation it was like she had five children.

Wasn't this actually a fitting punishment for my stupid little sister who aimed for a reverse harem?

Someone pinched my cheek while I was watching Marie with a grin.

「T-that 'urt」

*That hurt*, the one I told that was a girl whose long hair was tied into side ponytail.

Her hair was blonde at the root with a color gradation that was turning pinker the closer it was to the tip.

She had a tomboyish air and an appearance that looked a bit like a gal.

But, the person herself was a friendly and kind girl.

She also had a familial side to her. There was a strong gap to this girl.

「Why are you smirking like that?」

The one who was talking to me with a smiling face, Noelle Beltre(ノエル・ベルトレ)—her real name was Noelle Zel Lespinasse(ノエル・ジル・レスピナス).

—That otome game had a sequel. Noelle was the main character of that second game.

I got away from Noelle's hand and rubbed my cheek while answering.

「It's because Marie's situation has gotten really funny. Don't you think it's amusing? This is a precious data sample that showed how the result of aiming for reverse harem won't always result in happiness.」

Noelle was exasperated seeing me laughing.

「It's too much to call other people's life as data sample.」

「My bad. But, it's still funny.」

I wished that I could be allowed to at least laugh seeing how many times Marie had troubled me.

I was also supporting her livelihood monetarily.

I should be forgiven.

「Leon's personality is twisted.」

Noelle showed an exasperated expression, but then her smile soon returned.

And then she brought her face closer to mine.

In this distance our noses almost touched.



「Hey, more importantly accompany me shopping when we go home.」

「Shopping?」

「I've been a bother in Marie-chan's home like this, so I have to contribute too sometimes.」

「I think you don't really need to mind it though.」

Marie-chan eh.

Noelle and Marie had gotten really close with each other.

That couldn't be helped.

Noelle was living in our—no, Marie's mansion since the case with Pierre.

Even now I was living in Marie's mansion.

The reason was—it was something really troubling that was located on the back of my right hand.

Right now I was claiming it was wounded and kept the hand bandaged, but under the bandage was a symbol called “the crest of guardian” that was a proof of being recognized by the sacred tree.

I was recognized by the sacred tree's sapling that I secured during Pierre's incident.

Originally the sacred tree would choose a priestess.

I heard it would be the priestess who chose the guardian, so I let my guard down.

I turned around to look at the seat behind me.

Sitting there was a boy named Jean(ジャン), a student I got acquainted with at the commonwealth.

We were receiving supplementary lessons here because we didn't attend the academy during the incident that Pierre caused.

We were receiving supplementary lessons until now to make up for that.

「Are you going to go home after this too Jean? Then how about you go shopping together with us too?」

I observed Noelle while inviting Jean.

She looked like she was somewhat sulking—was it just my imagination?

「I have something I have to do after this. I plan to visit the house of relatives who had been taking care of me. It seemed I had made them worry. They sent me a letter asking me to come visiting.」

Jean refused my invitation with a smile.

「Besides, I'll feel bad if I got in the way of you two.」

Jean said that and turned his gaze at Noelle.

Noelle looked slightly embarrassed.

—Until just a little while ago, I thought the one who Noelle liked was Jean.

This male student called Jean wasn't a capture target, he was just a mob.

If Noelle liked Jean, then I thought it couldn't be helped but—it seemed it was just my misunderstanding.

This was troubling.

If Noelle was the main character of this second game, she needed to marry one of the capture targets.

The world would be in danger if she didn't do that.

The world might be destroyed because of some youngsters' romance.

What an unpleasant world.

And yet, the current situation wasn't really good.

The capture targets of the second game—Noelle's lover candidates actually had weak common ground with her at the present.

The first candidate, Loic Leta Barriere(ロイク・レタ・バリエル) was the main capture target but—this guy had become Noelle's stalker.

I heard that even in the game his monopolizing desire was a bit strong, but he was an even more dangerous guy than I imagined.

Because of that Noelle hated him and he was removed from being a lover candidate.

The second candidate was Narcisse Calse Granze(ナルシス・カルセ・グランジュ).

This person was a teacher of the academy. He was a noble who had passion for archeology and often went out for fieldwork due to his hobby.

He was a bit too enthusiastic with his hobby, but he wasn't a bad person.

Even so, at present he had no point of contact with Noelle at all.

It wasn't a matter whether Noelle conscious or not toward him, it was at the level of 「Narcisse-sensei? Aa, now that you mention it there is also a teacher with that name」 .

In the game, if you didn't take Narcisse's special class as a major subject until you advanced to the second year, there wouldn't be any flag with him and he would get automatically removed from the candidate list.

Speaking of automatic removal, there was also one more person who had vanished.

It was Hughes Toara Druille(ユーグ・トアラ・ドルレイユ).

If Noelle didn't raise this guy's flag at the first year, he would get automatically removed when she advanced to the second year—from there the two of them wouldn't have anymore relation with each other.

Noelle didn't make any contact with this third candidate too and it became impossible for him to become a lover candidate.

Next the fourth person was Emile Laz Plevin(エミール・ラズ・プレヴィン), but this guy was a lover candidate who was so easy to capture that he was called “safe tile”.

However, a reincarnator—Lelia Beltre(レリア・ベルトレ) who reincarnated to be Noelle's twin little sister became his lover.

That stupid Lelia stole Emile.

It was a situation where four of the lover candidates were completely impossible to get together with Noelle like this. As for the last one, Serge Sara Rault(セルジュ・サラ・ラウルト), he didn't attend the academy in the first place.

On top of having no encounter at all, this guy's family was in a complicated relationship with Noelle.

After all, this guy's adopted father, Albergue Sara Rault(アルベルク・サラ・ラウルト)—was the last boss.

His older stepsister Louise Sara Rault(レイーゼ・サラ・ラウルト)—was the second game's villainess.

And then, Rault House was the house that destroyed Lespinasse House.

I would be forced to answer it was difficult if I was asked whether the two of them could get together after this.

—The boys who were the capture target had been exterminated from the list.

In addition, even though I wasn't even Noelle's lover, the sacred tree's sapling got the nerve to choose me as the guardian.

No matter how I looked at it this was checkmate.

While I was thinking, Noelle pinched my shirt and made me stood up.

「Come on, quick.」

「I got it so don't pull my clothes.」

The two of us left the classroom.

Noelle called at Marie just before we left.

「Marie-chan, we're going to buy the seasoning that's going to run out.」

Marie made a slightly complicated expression when she heard that.

「T-thank you. More importantly, big—Leon. I got something to talk to you when you returned.」

She almost called me 「Big bro」 before she hurriedly corrected herself. But still, something to talk with me?

She couldn't talk about it in this place meant that it must be about our plan from here.

「Yeah, got it. I'll get back quickly.」

Then Marie sent her gaze briefly toward Noelle before her gaze returned back at me again.

「—The dinner preparation will be troublesome, you two go eat by yourself. We can have the talk at night.」

「I-is that so?」

Something was strange with Marie's behavior.

Recently she often acted like this.

But then I headed to go shopping with Noelle without saying anything more.

.

## **Part 2**

At night.

I and Noelle was having dinner in an open terrace area of a restaurant after finishing our shopping.

There were three large plates on a round table with a candle placed on it.

Near our hands there were small plates with a small bread placed on them.

We placed the brown paper bag filled with the things we purchased on the empty chair.

I was struggling hard against the boiled lobster dish while eating.

「This is hard to eat.」

Just a little while ago I received a lot of reparation money from the commonwealth in regard to Pierre's case, so I decided to splurge a bit and bought an expensive cooking. But this was the result.

It was a pain eating something that I wasn't used to.

「I can't bear watching this. Let me try.」

Noelle who was watching took away the crustacean ingredient that looked like a lobster from me.

Then she dismantled it easily unlike me.

After Noelle took out the meat, she placed it on a small plate and gave it to me.

Noelle used a napkin that was placed on the table and wiped her hands while looking a bit proudly at me saying 「How's that」 .

「That's amazing. So it can be dismantled this cleanly.」

「Dismantle—well, it's not wrong to call it that. So? Now it's easier to eat like this right?」

When I tried eating it, the meat was tender and delicious.

I could hear the voices of other customers enjoying themselves from inside the restaurant.

I also could hear the voices of the waiters reading the customers' order.

There was also the light from inside the restaurant and the street light. Although the top of the table was a bit dark, but we still could see quite clearly.

It created quite a nice atmosphere instead which was good in its own way.

「This is tasty. Try it too Noelle.」

「It makes me feel awkward to have you treating me every time. Leon, aren't you wasting too much money recently?」

The incident with Pierre had been settled and now I was enjoying life in the commonwealth quite much.

There were a lot of problems still remaining, but that was that, this was this.

「Most of what I bought were souvenirs. My family back home are annoying for this kind of thing.」

The one who was annoying me with their demand for souvenir was my family—my big sister Jena(ジェナ) and my little sister Finley(フィンリー).

They pestered me for fine gifts for souvenirs.

I also needed to give present for the people that I was indebted to, so I splurged quite a lot.

But, there was reason for all those spending so there was no problem.

Noelle's gaze turned doubtful at my claim that my spending couldn't be helped.

「But, those new tea sets are unnecessary aren't they? Just how much those tea sets inside the dedicated bag cost?」

「Hahaha—Noelle, do you want to try this one too? It's delicious.」

There were really nice tea sets in the commonwealth.

With so much money in my pocket right now, I couldn't help but want to get them.

But, the only things that I bought for myself were just those tea sets.

The things other than that were mostly just daily necessities.

「Leon?」

Noelle wouldn't let me change the topic, so I confessed honestly.

「—All of them amounted to a hundred thousand in total.」

A hundred thousand—of course it wasn't in yen.

If it was converted to Japanese yen, then the cost would be around ten million in total.

Noelle looked shocked. It seemed the price far surpassed her imagination.

「Before this you also bought things like expensive tea leaves or sweets didn't you?」

「I wanted to do a tea party with the new tea sets! This is my hobby! Noelle yourself, you also drank the tea and ate the sweets!」

To begin with, the one who I invited to the tea party was Noelle.

「N-no, that was, you know—they were delicious, so」

There were few entertainments in this other world.

For a modern person like me, it should be fine to have at least one hobby like this.

「It's one of my few hobbies.」

When I acted down, Noelle seemed to feel guilty and apologized.

「S-sorry. I said too much. Even so, I never expected that Leon's hobby is something like tea.」

Well, even myself acted 「Tea? Aa~, yeah yeah, tea huh」 until some time ago.

However, my sense of value changed after my encounter with master.

「Noelle too will surely get it if you participate in master's tea party.」

Noelle resumed her meal when she saw me praising master happily.

「I have heard that many times.」

I guess. I had talked a lot about that after all.

I also resumed my meal. Then a waiter approached us.

「Does dear customer wish to order more?」

Noelle didn't order anymore, but I did.

「Please bring the most expensive juice here.」

I tried ordering something expensive to act like a rich person.

The waiter made a troubled smile.

「I-I'm sorry, there isn't any juice with price that expensive.」

I knew that because I had seen the menu before.

「I'm joking. Give us two more drinks. The same things like before are fine.」

I ordered the same drinks like our first order.

Noelle also looked fine with that.

When the waiter left, Noelle asked me.

「You aren't drinking alcohol huh Leon? Even though Marie-chan and the others are drinking. Isn't it rare even at the kingdom for someone to not drink?」

In this world you would be allowed to drink alcohol when you were 17 years old.

You would be treated as adult at 15 years old, so whether one drank alcohol or not would be their own responsibility after that.

But I wasn't that interested in alcohol.

「I've decided to drink alcohol when I'm twenty.」

「Why's that?」

「It's my personal rule.」

It wasn't like I was that fixated with that rule but—it made me feel somewhat awkward to drink in this age, so I decided to not drink until I was twenty. In the first place I also didn't want to drink alcohol that badly.

Noelle smiled.

And then her smile turned a bit sad.

「What's wrong?」

When I asked her, Noelle shook her head.

Her side ponytail fluttered.

「It was my dream to have meal like this.」

Those words made me recalled the face of Noelle's little sister.

「What about Lelia?」

Noelle's expression turned a bit dissatisfied.

This girl's expression often changed rapidly.

「Leon really can't read the atmosphere, you're dense. Well, it's not like I mind that side of yours. —There is saying that sisters would one day separate from each other, in the first place Lelia doesn't wish to do this kind of thing.」

「He~eh」

Did something happen between these sisters?

Well, if it was that Lelia, it wouldn't be strange if something did happen.

After all the current situation was partly because of that girl's fault.

「Well, it's good if you have fun.」

Noelle looked at my face when I said that.

「What?」

Noelle showed me a smile. Her face looked really pretty.

「I'm just thinking that you look like you're enjoying the food. More importantly, about after this—」

Noelle wanted to ask about the plan after this, but there was footsteps approaching our table.

It wasn't the waiter, but someone who was our acquaintance.

I looked at that person's face. She was clearly making a displeased face.

—Lelia was raising an eyebrow with her hand on her waist. She didn't even try to hide her displeasure.

「There isn't any need to look that displeased.」

Noelle frowned and averted her face from Lelia.

「Lelia, do you need something?」

An awkward tension drifted between the two. The customers around were also looking this way with interest.

I sighed.

「You show up just when we were talking about you. Well, sit down. Do you want to drink something?」

Lelia averted her face from me when I addressed her.

「No need to bother! —I also come here with company.」

When I looked behind Lelia, there was Emile with his silky blue hair standing slightly behind her.

He was wearing an expensive looking suit.

I grinned when I saw him.

「What, are you in a date?」

「Shut up! Forget about that, today I'm going to come to your house.」

Noelle's expression turned grave when she heard that.

「Lelia, I told you already to not be a nuisance.」

「It's something important so just be quiet big sis.」

Lelia only said what she wanted to say before she left our table.

Emile made an apologetic face and bowed slightly to us before chasing after Lelia.

The surrounding got a bit noisy. It was then the waiter who had been observing the scene just now came bringing the juice we ordered.

「Thank you for waiting.」

I put some money on the waiter's tray to make up for the inconvenience.

The waiter happily left seeing that.

Noelle was looking down.

Lelia—that girl was the same reincarnator like us.

Also she was knowledgeable about that otome game's sequel.

「—Today let's go back after we finished eating.」

「Okay.」

Noelle was looking dejected, so we went home right away today.

## **Part 3**

After I returned to the mansion, I talked with Marie in the dining room about the plan from here.

The clock that was placed inside the room was showing the time had gone past 11 PM.

「—That Lelia, she is late.」

My irritation kept growing because she hadn't showed up yet. My finger was tapping on the table. Then Marie yawned.

「She was in a date right? Perhaps she is playing around. Or perhaps the mood turned good and she won't be able to come today.」

The sleepy looking Marie rubbed her eyes and said that it couldn't be helped even if Lelia didn't come.

「Making other people waiting like this, is that girl screwing around?」

「I'm telling you, the two of them will go until the end if they got heated up in their date right? Ah, I see. A wuss like big bro won't understand something like that.」

I was irritated that she was calling me a wuss.

「What do you mean by that?」

「No matter how I look at it, aren't big bro's attitude toward Noelle like a wuss. In the first place, it was also horrible when the fiancées who big bro left back home confessed to you wasn't it?」

Angelica and Livia ran out of patience against me who wouldn't give an answer no matter how long they waited, and so it was the two of them who confessed to me.

C-certainly, I might be a wuss at that time.

But, it was different with Noelle.

「Why are you calling my attitude toward Noelle a wuss huh?」

When I argued back, Marie made a face that looked really displeased.

「Big bro is really the worst.」

「—You are calling me the worst without even explaining the reason? Tell me, who is the one who get her livelihood supported by such man?」

When I attacked Marie's weak point, she protested tearfully.

「That attitude is also the worst!」

Luxion came to the dining room while we were noisily arguing with each other.

He had the appearance of metallic spherical body and a single red eye.

Today too he was notifying me with a way of speaking that was really unsuitable for when talking with his master.

『I also can't deny that master is a wuss.』

「Oi!?」

『More importantly, a guest has arrived.』

When I looked outside the window from the dining room, the outside was bright.

It was the light that came from a car.

「Is that Lelia?」

〔It looks like Emile is escorting her here.〕

Emile was really kind.

Marie headed to the entrance, then after a while she returned with Lelia in tow.

Emile's car was leaving from the mansion.

After Lelia sat down, Marie poured her a drink from the pot that had been prepared.

Lelia accepted it and suddenly entered the main topic.

「And, what are we going to do from now?」

Marie and I looked at each other, and then we both scoffed and shrugged.

Lelia scowled seeing our gesture and hit the table.

「What's with that attitude!」

Marie responded haughtily.

「You came this late and then suddenly asked what are we going to do? In the first place, it's your responsibility that the situation become troubling like this though?」

Lelia who got accused that this was her fault stood up and objected.

「Things had been going well until now with my way! If you two didn't mess up everything, even big sis and Loic—w-well, it might be difficult.」

Even Lelia was shaken.

The current Loic to put it mildly was a stalker.

To be honest, he was a criminal already.

Ah, there was no difference between the two I guess.

And then Noelle was harboring disgust toward him in the level of 「It's physiologically impossible」 .

The difficulty would be too difficult to make them became lovers from here so it was wiser to give up here.

I prepared teacake for Lelia.

「I investigated the situation of the guys who can become Noelle's lover candidate but, the possibility is annihilated already.」

When I looked at Luxion, he continued after me and told Lelia the situation.

〔About Narcisse, he has no student at all in this school year and it's very likely he will leave the academy. And then regarding Hughes, talk of his engagement is in progress right now. Emile is already in romantic relationship with you so he is out of the question. In that case the remaining candidate is only Serge. Currently his whereabouts is unknown so the information is lacking.〕

It wasn't because Luxion was unable to investigate, it was more a problem of resource.

He would be able to find Serge if he seriously investigated his whereabouts. But the problem was after we found him.

Noelle was avoiding the topic of Serge. Rather than because of Serge personally, she was avoiding the topic of Rault House altogether. The possibility of him becoming Noelle's lover was low.

Lelia made a troubled voice.

「Serge huh—」

「Do you know something?」

Lelia seemed evasive for some reason when I asked her for explanation about Serge.

「—Serge is yearning to be an adventurer, so he often skipped school.」

「I had heard about that.」

Previously when I was invited to Rault House, I heard the story about how Serge had yearning for the adventurer profession.

「Well, that's—even I thought that a spare was needed in case it failed with Loic, so I also approached Serge.」

Marie tilted her head.

「Then why were you fixated with Loic? Don't tell me, you also failed with Serge!?」

「Don't call it failure! T-that's not it I'm telling you. No, that's it though.」

This girl was really unclear.

Was it a failure or not, which one?

「Just what's the deal with that Serge-kun?」

Lelia gave up and talked about Serge.

「—It went smoothly until I became acquainted with Serge. But, big sis won't accept it because he is from Rault House, and Serge himself—he isn't interested with big sis.」

Both Noelle and Serge weren't interested with each other.

I didn't think that there was any problem if that was all.

However, Lelia continued.

「That guy, he said to me “I like you”.」

Lelia said that with a red face. Seeing that Marie made an extremely irritated face and clicked her tongue.

What's this—I felt scared and couldn't interrupt the talk.

「You, even though you were telling me “I can't believe you would aim for something like reverse harem!” so annoyingly like that, you yourself were making a pass at two men? I can't trust a woman like you the most.」

Lelia also talked back.

「I'm still better than you who are keeping five boyfriends!」

Well, certainly when comparing five people with two people, Lelia was still better even if it was just a scant difference—wasn't it?

But, it was really a stalemate if it was like this.

「This is checkmate huh.」

My words made Lelia pointed her finger at me and protested.

She was getting teary.

「Don't say that! My plan went out of the rail because you become the guardian!」

I wished she would stop with the false accusation.

It was this woman who caused the checkmate situation even before I became the guardian.

「It's not my fault. Even if it's actually really my fault, it's your fault for creating this kind of situation.」

Lelia got angry when I spoke bluntly like that.

She was lashing out even though she was the one in the wrong.

「You are saying it's my fault!?」

「Obviously. In the society, it's the guy's own fault if they got cornered into checkmate. In the first place, the situation wouldn't become like this if only you put more importance on Noelle's own opinion. Also if you created a chance for her to meet with Hughes or Narcisse, then we would still have options right now.」

Lelia couldn't say anything back and looked frustrated.

Well, it was also natural for her to want to complain at us after we messed up her plan.

Even so, she was at fault for creating this situation.

「Besides, what about you yourself? You secured the safest character Emile for yourself. Even though if you think about the situation then you should have avoided him.」

Behind me Marie was cheering 「Tell her! Tell her more big bro! Beat up the opponent with your preaching until they can't stand anymore like usual!」 .

Just what kind of person do you think I am?

「You should leave safe tile-kun so it should at least be possible to recover back no matter what is the situation. Do you have the awareness that it was you who created this situation?」

「Normally will someone really speak that far toward other person!?」

「If it's me then I'm going to say it. Don't think that all men will be unconditionally kind toward woman. Just so you know, I have nothing to fear anymore!」

Yes—I had nothing to fear anymore.

Because, I had two beautiful and kind fiancées.

I didn't fear anything anymore now.

Lelia looked down.

She apologized with a small voice.

「I, I think I'm at fault. Even I never imagined that Loic will become that horrible. At the first year I thought that it would be alright and felt relieved.」

So she let her guard down and failed.

Thanks to that the danger to the world was getting closer.

But nothing would be resolved even if we continued talking about this.

「Now then, let's discuss strategy about from here on again.」

I looked toward Luxion. He was going to explain several strategies for from here on.

『Well then, about the plan from here on—master, something important come up.』

「What's wrong?」

Luxion stopped his explanation and notified me of an outrageous information.

『An airship that is carrying Angelica and Olivia is approaching rapidly from the kingdom to here. Creare is also on board. It seems to be an emergency.』

「Emergency!?」

Did something happen at the kingdom?

For those two to come to the commonwealth in so much of a hurry, did a major incident happen?

Damn it.

Luxion's main body, the spaceship was currently near me—it was floating near the commonwealth. Because of that I couldn't receive news from the kingdom in real time.

「When are they going to arrive?」

『They will arrive at the harbor tomorrow morning.』

「D-did something happen!?」

『I don't know yet. There wasn't any report at all from Creare.』

Just what happened at the kingdom at this kind of time?

# ***Chapter 1 – Now in the Middle of Cheating!***

## ***Part 1***

This happened before the summer vacation.

A large commotion happened in Alzer Commonwealth. During that time there was a period when the people at Hohlfahrt Kingdom didn't understand the situation there because of the large distance between the two countries.

Leon's two fiancées were worried for him and the group who studied abroad at the commonwealth.

One was a duke's daughter, Angelica Rafa Redgrave(アンジェリカ・ラファ・レッドグレイブ).

She was a girl with shiny blonde hair that was braided into a bun and a strong-willed face.

Her red eyes gave off the strength of her will, but right now she was smiling eerily.

The second fiancée was Olivia, unlike Angelica—Ange, she was a commoner.

She was a girl who was given special permission to enroll into the kingdom's academy. She had the position as the main character of the first game of that otome game.

She was a girl with flax colored hair that was kept in bob haircut. She had a cute appearance that normally gave off a soft and comfortable atmosphere.

However, right now she was emitting an air that made it hard to approach her.

She was expressionlessly waiting for their arrival to the commonwealth inside the cabin of the airship Licorne(リコルヌ) —the second Einhorn(エインホルン) class airship.

Right now the two was heading to the commonwealth by using their summer vacation.

The reason was their fiancée Leon.

Ange talked to Olivia—Livia.

Her arms were folded below her large breasts. Her right hand's index finger kept tapping on her own arm in irritation.

「When is the infamous inspection of the commonwealth going to start? We have been made to wait for more than an hour. Don't you think it's vexing that we can't even move despite the commonwealth right before our eyes like this?」

Livia nodded and looked outside the window.

「They are only getting near, but they show no other movement. Really, just what are they thinking?」

Licorne was the same type of ship like Einhorn.

It had a characteristic horn on its bow.

The only difference it had with Einhorn was only the ship's color.

Its beautiful white hull looked dazzling due to the illumination of the sunlight.

Luxion was the one that created the baseline design, but Creare was the one who constructed the second ship without permission.

She had the same spherical body like Luxion's extension, but her color was white.

The lens of her eye was blue unlike Luxion's red.

It wasn't just that, her personality was also really different from Luxion.

The electronic voice she used to speak also sounded feminine.

『I wonder, perhaps they are admiring Licorne's beauty?』

Ange stood up from her chair at Creare's guess.

She was looking outside the window with a cold gaze.

「They're really easygoing if that's the case. Creare, connect me with the commonwealth's guardship. Tell them we're going to push through if they made us wait longer than this.」

『Oh, how extreme. Aren't you too hurried just because you want to meet with master quickly?』

Ange smiled coldly.

「It's because I'm so bothered by how Leon is doing in Alzer that I can't help it. That thing you picked up, "chat log" was it? If there is something like "in the middle of cheating now" in it, then even I won't be able to stay calm.」

The two of them came until the commonwealth in this summer vacation because they were suspecting that Leon was cheating.

But these two had different thinking in regard to this.

Although Ange was angry, she could forgive Leon.

「Good grief, there is an order of sequence even if he want to play around. Just what is he thinking doing as he please while leaving us behind.」

For Ange who was born in a duke house—a noble house, she knew that it would only ruin their health physically and mentally if they got angry when a man was cheating.

But it was different with Livia.

「I can't believe that Leon-san would do something like cheating. Because, he has never even laid his hand on us, how can he then cheat on us at other country in only this short time.」

Ange looked at Livia with a troubled expression.

「Leon is also a man after all. Livia, it will only break your health if you worry too much about it.」

「B-but!」

They were born and raised in two different environments, their way of thinking also differed.

Creare interrupted the two's conversation.

『Oh? The guardship of the commonwealth is running away.』

Ange tilted her head when she heard that.

「What about the inspection?」

『It seems it's fine for us to pass through. It's really strange.』

Livia pondered for a bit, but she then shook her head and switched her feeling.

「But we can enter Alzer with this. Now we can find out whether Leon-san has really cheated on us or not.」

Creare spoke in worry seeing Livia's serious gaze.

『I-is it really alright to not tell master? I think it'll be better to tell master that the two of you are coming.』

Ange had her own thinking in regard to that.

「Luxion will detect us whether we like it or not if we got nearer to the commonwealth right? If we informed them of our arrival beforehand, it will give them more time to erase the evidence. It will be better if we make Leon the one who contact us instead so we also won't need to march into his place.」

Ange's worry wasn't just about Leon cheating.

She was also bothered whether Leon was only playing around or serious with the cheating, but more than that she wanted to know who he was cheating with.

It would be problematic if the woman was someone troublesome.

She couldn't allow it if it was a wicked woman who led Leon by the nose.

If that was actually the case, she intended to sever their relationship at any cost.

But, the worst case would be if the woman was someone with authority.

It would be extremely troublesome if Leon was having relationship with Alzer's noble.

It would still be better if the woman was a noble with low rank.

But it would be a big problem if the woman had high status.

「That Leon, is he really alright?」

Cheating was unforgivable.

Also Leon was a hero of the kingdom—even if he was cheating, with his status he had to be careful with whom he was doing it.

Ange was also worried with one more dangerous possibility.

(I hope he isn't cheating with Marie.)

The woman who ensnared a lot of noble youths including the crown prince Julius—Marie.

Such existence was right beside Leon.

Ange's mind was really weighed by it.

(Leon—don't you dare betray me.)

.

## **Part 2**

I came to Alzer's harbor.

The airship entered the harbor slightly later than the expected schedule. The people of Alzer were clamoring.

The military officers were nervous.

There were three ships that came from the kingdom.

However the onlookers that gathered here only focused on one ship.

Although that white airship had different color from Einhorn, their shape was exactly the same.

If it had the same color than perhaps no one would be able to tell the difference.

「There is some little difference I think? What do you think Luxion? Luxion?」

When Licorne was anchored beside Einhorn, Luxion was trembling seeing that.

Was that his expression of anger? This guy was really attentive to detail.

『Now you have done it Creare.』

「Eh, what? It wasn't you who constructed that white one?」

『I'm not! Creare used the spare parts that I prepared for Einhorn as she pleased and constructed the second ship without even asking for permission!』

Luxion was angry.

But, when I looked at the white and beautiful airship, I forgave Creare.

Because it wasn't something that hurt me in the slightest anyway.

「It's fine isn't it? I can feel relieved if it has the same capability with Einhorn. Ange and Livia can make use of it.」

『She modified my blueprint. Its specs are unknown. Something like this is unforgivable. I'll interrogate Creare for a bit, so excuse me.』

Luxion flew away.

While I saw him off, a ramp extended from the white airship.

I saw the silhouettes that walked down the ramp and waved my hands energetically.

「Oo~i, you two!」

I ran toward them for the long awaited reunion. The two of them welcomed me with smiling faces—eh?

Strange.

The two of them were certainly smiling but, I wonder why—they looked really scary.

I wondered if perhaps I had done something. I was gradually curling up into myself.

「D-did something happen today? Both of you, look a bit scary with that smile.」

I tried inquiring for the reason. In respond Livia brought her face closer.

It was really close.

Our noses even touched.

「Long time no see, Leon-san.」

Livia greeted me with a smile, but then her expression immediately vanished.

「By the way, is there anything that you're hiding from us?」

She asked me something like that. My eyes turned round in surprise.

Anything I'm hiding?

It was too many that I didn't know which one she was referring to.

「W-what could you possibly mean?」

It would be dangerous if I started talking without knowing more, so I turned my gaze toward Ange.

Ange was smiling.

「I'm relieved seeing you looking lively like this. No, perhaps you're too lively? Now Leon—I'll have you tell us everything.」

Luxion should be helping me in this kind of time, but he had entered the white airship and showed no sign of returning.

I was asking for help inside my heart.

Come.

Come here!

When are you going to help me if not now!

I'm begging you, come back Luxion!

I was looking for help with twitching smile, but sadly we were master and servant whose hearts weren't connected.

There was no way my voice of heart would go through to him.

Livia grabbed my arm.

Even though I would be able to shake off her hands if I wanted, it felt like my arm was grabbed by a very strong power mentally.

「Leon-san, first we're going to check your residence.」

Ange hugged my other arm with her own arms and whispered into my ear.

「We have cancelled all of our plans for the summer vacation for this. Don't think that you'll be able to escape.」

Just what had I done to deserve this!

The possible reasons were too many that I couldn't imagine which one had caused the two of them to be this angry.

Was it that?

Because I had rampaged as I pleased at Alzer?

Or was it because I had worked Julius and others had like laborer? —I didn't think they would be angered by that one I guess.

Or perhaps, was it because of my letter to Mylene-sama that was filled with sentences that would set one's teeth on edge?

Come to think of it, I also sent souvenir and letter to Clarice-senpai.

Perhaps that was a wrong thing to do?

Or else, was this about me having fun shopping with Deirdre(デイアドリー)-senpai when she visited as diplomat a little while ago?

Ah, I also had tea with her.

We had fun in a really expensive restaurant for dinner.

Other than those—other than those—I see! Perhaps it was about me supporting Marie's livelihood! Surely such thing would make these two angry.

Would it really make them angry? But, if they knew about the reason then—I guess they would still be angry.

Marie had stolen Ange's fiancée.

It was unthinkable that Ange and Livia would sympathize with Marie after such thing happened.

Shit! I didn't know which one of them had set off their anger.

「Leon-san, please tell us the truth.」

「Prepare yourself. Because depending on the situation then I'll have to get serious too.」

The two of them dragged me away from the harbor.

Really, just what had I done to anger the two of them like this?

.

## **Part 3**

A problem occurred in Marie's mansion.

Marie was in summer vacation right now. But thanks to that she needed to take care of the five from morning until night.

「Wait! Who was the one who ate the soup for lunch!?」

Marie who had to prepare breakfast, lunch, and dinner worked hard the first thing at morning to cook a large pot of soup.

She thought the soup would be able to hold until dinner—no, until lunch if there was this much.

Leon went out at morning, even so there were five male students who were big eaters in this mansion.

She also couldn't find other foods that she had prepared for lunch like bread or ham.

In addition, there were also some tableware that looked used left behind on the table.

(U-unbelievable! Even though everyone should have known that I was super busy cleaning this mansion since the morning!!)

Marie heard from Leon that Ange and Livia would be coming, so she hurriedly went to clean the mansion.

Kyle(カイル)—the half elf boy who was Marie's personal servant and also Cara were busy cleaning the mansion too.

It was after such hard work that Marie finally entered the kitchen at noon and found the place in this state.

The one who came with a worried look because Marie raised her voice like that was Jilk who seemed to be preparing tea.

He was holding a teapot in one hand.

「What's the matter Marie-san?」

Marie pointed at the kitchen with a trembling hand when she saw Jilk.

「Who was the one eating everyone's lunch?」

There wasn't even one hour until it became twelve o'clock.

It would be difficult to start preparing a lot of food from now.

She would have to go shopping first.

In the worst case, after the boys finished eating, she might have to take Kyle and Cara to eat out.

However she couldn't forgive the one who ate the lunch as they pleased.

Hearing that question, Jilk looked embarrassed without any sign of guilt at all.

「Aa, that. Actually Greg-kun said that he was hungry.」

「I see. —So it was Greg.」

「No. We also felt hungry, so the five of us searched for something to eat. And then we found the pot of soup, so although it was a bit improper we brought out the ham and bread and cooked by ourselves. It was fun to do something like that sometimes.」

Marie looked at Jilk with her eyes opened wide.

She was thinking of how to vent the rage whirling inside her small body.

But, Jilk didn't notice how she was feeling at all.

He dared to claim that simply heating up a finished soup in the kitchen and cutting bread and ham was cooking.

(How can you call something like that cooking! What are you guys planning to do for your lunch now!)

Marie suppressed her desire to yell and immediately asked Jilk to gather the five boys to scold them.

「Jilk—gather everyone. I was wrong. Now that we are living in this mansion I should have taught everyone the basic first.」

She was ashamed of herself who was thinking that these five should be able to understand simple things like this.

She should have beaten up the basic into them right from the beginning.

The time had come to finally face the problem that she had ignored until now because of the busy days of studying abroad.

Marie thought that but—.

「Eh? Everyone is out right now though.」

—It seemed everyone other than Jilk was going out.

「They are out you say!?」

Even though they were really busy cleaning since the morning, these guys were gallivanting around instead—Marie reached her limit when she learned that.

Jilk talked to Marie to calm her down seeing her greatly agitated like this.

「Marie-san, please calm down. It will be noon soon, don't you feel hungry right now? I've just obtained a nice sweet that I'm going to enjoy with tea. How about enjoying them before lunch?」

Marie was angry, but her stomach was also hungry.

Marie thought to eat something for now to calm down.

「Alright. Even so, is there really any sweets here? The sweets that big br—Leon brought had already run out yesterday.」

Marie almost said big bro before she corrected herself midway.

Leon's hobby was tea. He often bought sweets that matched well with tea.

Marie couldn't complain because she would also receive his leftover, but she also felt irritated seeing her big brother always buying expensive sweets.

However, it was also Leon alone who was financially supporting them, so she couldn't say any complain.

Marie went out of the kitchen and entered the dining room. There Jilk was already preparing the tea.

Marie was shocked when she saw the table.

「What's that!?」

It was normal that there were tea set and sweets lined up on the table.

However the amount of sweets was too many.

Steel cans filled with the purchased sweets were piled up.

All of the sweets looked obviously expensive.

Jilk started boasting without noticing the shock that Marie received.

「Actually I have also just returned back from outside. I happened to see a nice tea set at where I was going and purchased it, so I also bought the tea leaves and sweets that matched the tea set.」

Tea set? Tea leaves? Marie was trembling when she heard Jilk had not bought only sweets, but also those things.

「You bought them!? What about the money!?」

Of course she was also giving Jilk some allowance, but she had never let him brought a lot of money.

Jilk looked confused.

「Eh? Ah, I found some money when I searched for food with everyone, so I split the money with everyone before we were going out. It's the basic to split the reward according to the number of people.」

That was of thinking was really typical for descendants of adventurers—that wasn't what Marie was thinking.

Treating looking for food the same like treasure hunting, and splitting the spoils of war evenly—when Jilk said that, Marie was unable to laugh.

After all, if there was a large amount of money inside this mansion, then that would be Marie's money.

To be more accurate, it was the living expense that she received from Leon.

Marie ran out of the dining room and rushed into the room where she kept the money.

She let her guard down because there were only acquaintances living in this mansion, so she hid the money here without putting it into something like a safe.

The hiding place was a desk drawer that she remodeled to have double layers of bottom. That hiding place had been splendidly discovered and emptied now.

The household account book was placed on the desk. She wrote how to make do using the money she received from Leon in it but—everything had become pointless.

「NoooOoooOOooOooooOoooo!!」

Not a single cent of the money was left.

Marie fell on her knees from shock.

\*Gan!\* Such nice sound resounded.

The one who noticed the sound and came was Noelle who carried a transparent case where the sacred tree's sapling was kept.

She was just passing through in front of the room at that timing.

「Marie-chan, what's wrong!?」

Seeing Noelle rushing in, Marie became panicked from something else.

(Nyaaaa!! Why is Noelle still in the mansion!? Even though I heard that today she is returning home!?)

Ange and Livia were coming here from the kingdom.

Because of that Marie didn't want Noelle to stay in this mansion.

Because—Leon hadn't noticed Noelle's feeling.

Noelle helped Marie standing up with the sapling's case held under her arm.

「What's wrong? You even made such strange scream.」

「N-no. It's nothing. There was just a bit—or rather a really large problem.」

「That's really serious then!」

「I-I'll take care of it so it's fine! More importantly, why are you still here? Didn't you say that today you are going home?」

Marie thought that Leon would come back soon based on the time, so she wanted Noelle to leave the mansion quickly.

Originally she wanted to tell Noelle the truth—and made her give up on Leon.

But, Noelle was too much of a good girl—so she couldn't say it when she saw the way she was looking at Leon.

There was also how she was the main character of that otome game's sequel, and she was also being chased around by a nasty man right now, so Marie wanted to keep her close by.

However right now the timing was bad.

(Why do I have to go through this much trouble for the sake of my dense brother huh! That stupid big bro, even though he himself said

「I hate dense protagonist」. There is a limit even in being insensitive!)

Leon didn't understand Noelle's feeling at the slightest.

Although he was her blood-related brother—no, her brother from the previous life, this made her thought of him as pathetic.

Noelle looked shy.

「E-err, it's because I forgot to move this child to a bright place.」

Noelle held the sacred tree's sapling with both hands. Her face was gentle.

She was looking at the sapling lovingly.

To Marie it looked as though the main character and the key item were attracting each other.

「I-I see. Then you better hurry—ah!？」

Marie was thinking of how to lead Noelle outside of the mansion, but then the sacred tree's sapling started shining faintly.

Then the back of Noelle's right hand also started shining. A crest formed there.

“The priestess's crest” that Marie remembered even within her fading memory about that otome game was forming there.

Noelle watched that in surprise, but her expression then gradually softened. Her cheeks were also blushing faintly red.

Marie's feeling had gone past confusion and straight into chaos.

(Wait. Just wait a second! Even though there are still events that haven't happened, why would the priestess's crest come out at this time!? Or rather, with this—could it be that Noelle's partner is)

Noelle stared at the back of her right hand while muttering happily.

「With this if a crest also appeared on Leon—that would mean that our hearts are connected wouldn't it?」

Marie recalled something when she heard her muttering that.

(D-damn ittttt!! I haven't told Noelle that big bro has the guardian's crest!?)

The problems that they had been postponing until now were rolling out one after another in a bad timing.

Marie wanted to cry.

And then—.

「I'm home~. Eh? Where is everyone?」

—A carefree voice came from the entrance.

It was Leon.

Noelle made a taken aback expression, then she left the room while pulling Marie's hand.

「Marie-chan, it's better if you rest for now.」

「Yeah. Yeah—I'm already at my limit now.」

Leon came home in the worst ever timing.

Marie was already—at her limit in everything.

(What's going to happen now?)

.

## **Part 4**

After Noelle brought Marie to her room, she went to meet Leon with the sapling's case in her hands.

If a crest also appeared on Leon—it would also meant that Noelle's love was realized.

Lespinasse House where the priestess would appear and was also the representative of the seven great nobles in the past had a legend that they believed in since a long time ago.

The legend said that the young man who possessed the strength that was worthy to be the guardian and the priestess would fall in love.

She felt incredulous toward that legend when she was little.

After all she was living in a world where political marriage was commonplace.

It was unnatural for such legend to exist.

At the same time—she was also thinking that it would be nice if such legend was actually true.

And then right now Noelle's wish might come true.

Noelle went down the stairs while hugging the case.

「Please. Sapling-chan—make my wish come true.」

The mysterious foreign student who came from the kingdom—Leon.

For Noelle, Leon was a reliable existence.

His guts to pick fight with the six great nobles was also amazing but, his strength that won against them was also amazing.

He also got quite a problematic personality but—Noelle didn't hate Leon.

He would help her when she was in a bind.

He got a slightly bad mouth but, he was a broadminded man.

Noelle was born as a noble, but she was raised mostly as commoner.

Because of that her sense of value was closer to a commoner than a noble.

For such Noelle, it would be great if she could go out with Leon normally.

She felt a peace of mind when she was together with him, and she also wanted to be together with him forever from now on.

Noelle loved Leon.

But—when she came down from the stairs, there was another voice that didn't belong to Leon coming from the entrance.

It was a girl's voice.

「Good grief—I was surprised when I heard you're living together with Marie, but that was what actually happened. Still, if that was the situation then wouldn't it be better if you tell us sooner?」

There was a girl wearing a red dress.

She was standing really close to Leon. Noelle noticed when she saw the girl's gaze toward him.

(—Eh?)

The girl's appearance gave a slightly strict impression, but she was looking at Leon with a really kind gaze.

There was another girl at the opposite side of the girl.

That girl gave a completely opposite reaction from the other girl, but Noelle could see a color of jealousy in her eyes.

She was hugging Leon's arm.

「That's right. Does Leon-san know just how worried we were!?」

She was angry, yet at the same time she was acting spoiled at Leon.

And Leon himself was accepting of those.

「Sorry. There were a lot of commotions here and it had only finally calmed down recently. I should have contacted both of you sooner.  
」

Leon's gaze toward the two of them was really kind.

He had never looked at her with such eyes.

When Leon noticed Noelle, he addressed her just like usual.

「Eh? Aren't you going home today? Oops, I forgot to introduce them. These two are my fiancées. They're Ange and Llvia.」

It was a bitter fact for Noelle.

That he never treated her as woman right from the start.

In the first place she had never even heard anything about him having fiancées.

(What. So it was just me who was getting excited by myself)

Noelle immediately donned a smiling face and brightly greeted the two girls.

「Nice to meet you! I'm Noelle. I've been in the care of everyone here until now. More importantly Leon. If you have two fiancées this beautiful then won't it be bad for me to live here? You'll get misunderstood.」

She acted so that the two girls wouldn't misunderstand the relationship between her and Leon.

Ange smiled at her.

「I've heard what happened. It must be hard on you.」

Ange looked sympathetic toward Noelle. She might have heard what happened with Loic.

But Livia was—looking like she had noticed something.

But she didn't show it in her attitude.

「Err, I'm Olivia. Thank you for taking care of Leon-san.」

「I'm the one who have been in his care so don't mind it.」

Noelle was talking with them with a smile, but inside she wanted to disappear from here right away.

Noelle walked toward Leon and handed the sapling's case to him.

「What's wrong?」

Leon looked puzzled.

She couldn't forgive that.

But, the one she couldn't forgive the most was herself.

「S-sorry, I'm going home now.」

She held back her tears and left the mansion.

She left the mansion and ran back to her home while crying.

She returned to the home that she had left for quite long. Inside her little sister Lelia was also home and called out to her, but she ignored her and entered her room. She immediately threw herself on her bed and buried her face onto the pillow.

# **Chapter 2 - Temporary Homecoming**

## **Part 1**

「Eh? A summon?」

After Noelle hurriedly returned.

I was enjoying tea with Ange and Livia in Marie's mansion.

I was right to prepare my treasured tea leaves and sweets.

Ange drank the tea I prepared. She was looking really nostalgic after drinking for the first time in a long time.

Even though we were frequently enjoying tea together like this until just several months ago.

「There is also a summon from his majesty. There won't be any problem if it's during the summer vacation right?」

I didn't really have any plan here, so I had no problem with it.

The matter of Noelle was weighing my mind, but these two wouldn't understand even if I explained to them.

Actually this world is an otome game world, and Noelle is the second game's main character! —if I said that, what kind of eyes they would be looking at me with. It was scary just imagining it.

「Still, it feels somewhat abrupt to be asked to go back with everyone.」

When I said that, Ange pointed out my misunderstanding.

「Marie and others will stay here. It's just you alone Leon who will come back together with us.」

「Eh?」

I completely thought that everyone was called back, but it seemed it was just me who was called back.

That bastard Roland(ローランド), what was he planning calling me back alone like this?

—No, I knew he was the king, but for some reason I couldn't forgive just that guy.

Livia took a bite on a sweet, and then she returned it on the plate.

It was one of the sweets that I found in the dining room. They were Marie's sweets.

It seemed it didn't suit Livia's palate.

I thought I heard that they were sweets that Jilk bought.

Livia drank the tea I prepared to wash down the taste before she spoke.

「Actually, her majesty approved this summon too because she also want to talk about the plan from here on if there is some movement from the commonwealth.」

「Mylene-san said that!? No, the queen said that?」

The two's gaze turned slightly intense when I called the queen by name.

Mylene Rafa Hohlfahrt(ミレーヌ・ラファ・ホルファート)-sama of Hohlfahrt Kingdom was Julius's biological mother.

But despite her age she was a beautiful woman who still looked really young.

If it was at my previous life then I might made a pass on her.

—Wait, she was someone else's wife so I shouldn't make a pass on her.

Really, just why she was someone else's wife.

Even though she completely my preference.

「E-err—then I guess I have to return.」

Livia pouted when I tried to get back into the topic.

「Leon-san, you look happy after knowing that you'll be able to meet the queen.」

Because she is cute mon.

Even now I still couldn't believe how could such person become Roland's wife.

Political marriage was really horrible.

Ange told me about the plan from now on.

「Sorry but I'll have you return back immediately. After all only you Leon will be able to move if something happen in the commonwealth.」

I didn't want to get involved with the commonwealth's government but, the kingdom—Hohlfahrt Kingdom was different.

One of the six great nobles, Faiviel(フェーヴェル) House had their authority falling rock bottom.

Well, the reason was because I beat them up badly, but if a political change occurred because of that then the kingdom would also get affected—there was such possibility.

The kingdom wouldn't be able to carelessly get involved, but they might be thinking that if it was me who was currently staying here then I would be able to do something.

—They were overestimating too much.

I wasn't that much different from an amateur when it came to politic.

Ange looked around the dining room.

「Even so, you're living together with his highness and others here. —It's worrying whether you might commit a mistake with Marie.」

I could declare with absolute certainty that such thing was the only thing that wouldn't happen.

「Don't worry. There is nothing between Marie and me, and nothing will happen between her and me even in the future.」

Livia turned a doubting gaze at me.

「Really? Because Leon-san, you would lie sometimes.」

「That's horrible. Even though honesty is my only good point.」

Ange laughed a little seeing my barefaced lie.

「It has been so long since the last time I listened to your false-sounding words while drinking tea. Now then, I'm sorry to hurry you like this but, if there is nothing else then we're going to depart tomorrow. Leon, is there anything that you need to take care of?」

There wasn't really anything but, I wanted to go buy souvenir.

「Ah, in that case do you two want to sightsee? I want to stop by at my family's home when returning back, so I want to buy souvenirs first.」

The two of them looked and then nodded at each other.

「Got it. Escort us properly in that case.」

「We're looking forward to it, Leon-san.」

I felt really happy seeing their smile toward me.

And then I decided to make Marie deal with the problem in the commonwealth for the time being.

But, leaving things to her made me—a bit uneasy.

.

## **Part 2**

That night.

Leon took Ange and Livia out for sightseeing.

It seemed they would also have dinner outside.

Those two must not wanted to eat the dinner that Marie prepared.

Marie could understand that.

But she was troubled that Leon wouldn't return to the mansion.

「Why doesn't big bro return!?」

Marie was protesting at Creare tearfully.

〔Because, the two of them said that they don't want to stay in this mansion.〕

「It's fine if big bro return by himself isn't it!? Even though I want to consult with big bro about our living expensee!」

Their living expense had been taken away by the five idiots.

She didn't know how much of that money could be returned.

If she was unlucky, they might have to spend the summer vacation pennilessly.

「I don't know the edible type of grass in this country you knooow」

If she was at her home town, she also knew the type of edible grass there, so if it was just her then she would be able to endure.

However it was a different story when she was at the land of a foreign country.

Marie didn't know whether the grass growing around here could be eaten or not.

『—Marie-chan, you are planning to eat the plants growing around here? Well, putting aside that problem, it can't be helped isn't it? Do you think that those two will want to stay in this mansion? Even though there are Marie-chan and Julius here?』

Before, Julius got seduced by Marie and broke off his engagement with Angelica.

Ange would surely hate it to spend the night under the same roof with the two of them.

「Big bro has his own house isn't he?」

『Master said that place is not good because it hasn't been cleaned. That's why, today they will sleep in Licorne and return to the kingdom at morning right away with Einhorn.』

Marie fell into despair.

Because even though it was summer vacation in foreign country—she wouldn't be able to enjoy the vacation.

「What do I do nowwww!」

Creare was having fun watching Marie's situation, but she finally told her the truth.

『Geez, Marie-chan is really stupid. Even master has known about your situation.』

「Really!?」

『Master is going to leave the commonwealth for a while, so he left a message to Marie-chan to deal with anything that happen while he is absent.』

「Eh, that's all? Stupid big brooo!」

The additional living expense that she was hoping for wasn't prepared for her.

Creare did something and, \*wham\*, something fell.

Marie immediately reacted to that sound.

「Th-this is」

Falling over there was a bag that was filled with rolls of money.

『You see, master thought that Marie-chan will surely need money for the living expense here, so he prepared this for you.』

Marie leaped at the money bag and rubbed her cheeks on it.

「I loovee you Onii-chan!」



Creare spoke in exasperation seeing Marie like that.

『You're really honest to your desire Marie-chan. But, I don't hate that. Because, the blood of old mankind is thick in you! I loovee you Marie-chan!』

Marie didn't understand the feeling of old mankind's weapons like Luxion or Creare.

That was why she ignored the talk about blood or DNA.

What was important right now was her living expense. Marie hugged the money bag lovingly.

「Tell big bro to leave everything here to me. Even the six great nobles are scared against big bro and won't do anything anyway.」

『I think it's not good to be careless though. Well, this time I'll stay here and help out though.』

「Eh? You're staying behind?」

『It'll be worrying with just Marie-chan and others here after all. But, I'm originally a laboratory AI, so it will be troubling if you expect as much utility as Luxion from me.』

Creare muttered 『I hope master will return as quickly as possible』 .

Marie was easygoingly thinking 「There is no need to worry if we have you here isn't it?」 .

The six great nobles were scared toward Leon and wouldn't make any move—Marie was thinking so.

She was more worried about Noelle rather than them.

「I'm more worried about Noelle though.」

『She is the second game's main character isn't she? Did something happen?』

——She is in broken heart right now. I never thought that she will fall in love with big bro.」

.

## **Part 3**

The next day.

Lelia was shocked when she saw Noelle going out of her room.

Swollen eyes from too much crying and messed up hair.

They already had unruly hair type from the start, but right now it was especially horrible.

Noelle touched her hair to hide her embarrassment.

「Even the bed feels strange when I used it after so long. The weather today is also good, perhaps I should clean up my room.」

Lelia became worried seeing Noelle forcing herself to smile.

「Did something happened, big sis?」

「It's nothing.」

Because they were sisters—because they were twins, she understood.

No, even a stranger would be able to guess that something happened to Noelle if they saw her current appearance.

Lelia prepared a drink for Noelle.

「I don't really mind if you don't want to say but, you'll feel easier if you talk about it.」

She prepared a cup of coffee for her.

When Lelia handed it to Noelle, her movement stopped for an instant in surprise.

Noelle was hiding the back of her right hand.

She mostly guessed what it was about just from that.

(Don't tell me, the priestess's crest has appeared? But, then—could it be, that big sis's partner is Leon?)

The order was different, but now the crests of the guardian and the priestess had appeared.

Speaking in game term, with this one of the clear conditions had been cleared.

But Noelle's condition was strange.

Lelia was confused, but she made sure to not show it.

Noelle hid her face with her left hand.

「—Lelia, you know about our family's legend aren't you? You know, about the story of the priestess and the guardian.」

Lelia drank her coffee while recalling the legend.

(There was also that kind of I think.)

That legend was an important part in the love matter of that otome game's sequel.

The guardian was originally a man that the priestess chose.

In other words, the person who was chosen by the priestess would be the one who could obtain the highest rank among the crests that the sacred tree bestowed to the people.

Because of that, there was this kind of legend throughout that otome game's story.

「The one whose heart is connected with the priestess and hold a strong feeling toward the priestess just as the priestess hold a strong

feeling toward him will be the one worthy to be the guardian. —It was something like that wasn't it? That was also how Kaa-san chose Tou-san.]

(Yes, our mother had a fiancée named Albergue from Rault House, but she chose Tou-san who didn't come from the six great nobles.)

Their father was a commoner who didn't have a crest.

Their mother betrayed Albergue and chose their father.

Albergue was angry because of that and destroyed Lespinasse House for revenge—that was how Albergue was in the game.

Lelia also remembered that time.

(And then the main character nurtured love with the capture target at the academy and chose the one she love as guardian at the end. But, at this rate Leon will be the one chosen.)

If that happened then it would spell nothing but trouble for Lelia.

She never thought that her big sister would choose Leon of all people.

But Noelle said.

「You see—I liked Leon. But, it seems that it's just a one-sided feeling. It was impossible to keep living together with him like that, that was why I returned back.」

She said that while crying.

Noelle's gaze was directed toward the back of her right hand.

She must be mentally weak right now.

She tried to hide that she had obtained the priestess's crest, but Lelia was able to notice it right away.

(Is this bad or good, I can't decide.)

She was happy that the guardian and priestess were all present, but now Noelle was feeling dejected.

She couldn't predict the development from here.

「Did big sis confess to that guy? He doesn't look popular, so if big sis confess to him he looks like someone who will leap at the chance right away.」

Leon didn't have good look like Loic and others.

Besides she also never heard about any fickle rumor about him.

That was why she thought he didn't have any girl who he was going out with.

Noelle shook her head.

「He has fiancée. —Two of them.」

「Twooo!？」

It was also surprising to learn that he had fiancée, to know that he had two was completely out of her expectation.

「I, I see. That guy is also more or less a noble after all, perhaps something like that isn't that rare in the kingdom?」

Lelia said that while starting to panic if perhaps her own knowledge was mistaken.

(Wait. In the kingdom, I think it's the woman who has stronger position there, but is it perhaps different when it's not game but reality? I should have confirmed that with those guys.)

「W-well, I understand the situation now. And so, what is big sis going to do now? It's not good to keep dragging it behind you forever. Instead how about big sis try to look for a new love?」

Lelia wracked her brain to pick who she should introduce to Noelle, but Noelle shook her head.

「It's alright right now. Thing like love—I don't want to think about it at all.」

Lelia thought that the damage her sister got was serious, but for now she decided to consult with Leon and Marie first.

But, she also couldn't leave Noelle alone when she was like this, so she accompanied her for this whole day.

.

## **Part 4**

Before we headed to the palace, I stopped by at Baron Bartfalt's territory first which was my hometown.

When father welcomed me, he grabbed my shoulders and shook me back and forth.

「Just what have you been doing at other country! As I thought it was the right move to engage you. No, was it a failure? Anyway why are you suddenly cheating huh!」

It looked like the suspicion of me cheating was also spreading to back home.

They really were distrusting.

「No way I'll do something like cheating. That's a misunderstanding. Misunderstanding!」

「R-really?」

Someone came while I was talking with father. It was my big sister Jena who returned home because it was summer vacation.

「Leon, where is the souvenir?」

Coming together with her was my little sister Finley.

She had petite stature and slender body. Her hair was kept short with curls on the end.

Her gaze toward me looked harsh must be because she heard about the cheating suspicion.

「—Onii-chan is the worst.」

Why was I reproached like this? I already said that it was a misunderstanding.

I set that aside and stared fixedly at my big sister Jena.

「W-what? Are you perhaps getting horny with your own big sister?」

There were things that couldn't be said even as a joke.

There was no way I would get horny with my blood-related big sister.

The reason I was staring at Jena because I recalled someone at the commonwealth who asked me 「Call me Onee-chan」 .

Her name was Louise-san.

She was a kind and reliable person.

I averted my gaze from Jena.

「Change」

When I said that, Jena's faced turned red and she rattled on complaints at me.

「What! What's that!? You suddenly stared at other and said "change"! You're really a rude guy. I can't believe someone like this can cheat, the commonwealth must be a really strange country.」

I said to Jena.

「Forget about that, were you able to find a marriage partner at the academy, Onee-sama?」

Jena trembled and ran away from me.

Finley also followed behind Jena and stuck her tongue 「Beeh~」 at me.

This was Jena we were talking about, so I didn't think that she would be able to find anyone.

It seemed I was right on the mark.

I saw off Jena with a triumphant smile.

「I win.」

Father was exasperated.

「Don't provoke her. Even Jena has been working hard, but the men in the academy is playing it safe right now and she can't find anyone there.」

「Playing it safe?」

「If they're going to marry, then it's better with a girl who hasn't been dyed with the academy's common sense, something like that? Well, I'll marry Jena with other house that is our dependent, so she'll be able to marry.」

By dependent father meant a knight house that was like our subordinate.

Someone with knight peerage was often called as quasi-baron.

For such house to be able to wed the daughter of their superior's daughter—I would be put off if it was me.

「You're going to push off Jena to them? That dependent house will be too pitiful.」

「D-don't call it pushing off. I'm planning to marry her off after educating her properly.」

In the end it was just a plan. —Based from what I saw just now, I could only say that it would be difficult.

Even so, the marriage situation in the kingdom was also gradually changing.

I felt jealous at my juniors.

No, I had two wonderful fiancées, so I didn't need to feel any jealousy.

Father asked me.

「More importantly, you were summoned to the palace right? What kind of mess you made this time?」

「Please don't speak like I'm always making a mess every time. This time I was only beating up a son of a big shot at the commonwealth.」

「—Sometimes I would feel guilty toward the palace. There is this desire to say, I'm sorry that my son is always being a bother.」

How rude.

The one who was being bothered was me instead of them.

.

## **Part 5**

When I showed up at the castle, Roland was waiting for me.

Because the meeting wasn't in the audience hall, even acting slightly informal was allowed.

Around us there were the government officials and the guard knights.

There was also Mylene-san here, but Roland looked like he wanted to talk to me.

He seemed tired. His complexion looked bad and his hair was also slightly disarrayed.

Apparently he was busy every day with the matter of the commonwealth and he complained about it.

「You look lively, brat. Even though I don't even have time to sleep here because of someone's fault.」

「Yes. I always sleep soundly everyday.」

I turned a refreshing smile toward Roland who couldn't sleep.

Roland gritted his teeth in frustration.

I wanted to see that face.

Looked like I would be able to sleep well too today.

「I'm extremely busy right now thanks to you. You really love to cause problems.」

「The noble of Alzer picked a fight with us. I thought it would be impolite if I don't respond in kind.」

「Going into war just because of a mere quarrel, that's really a barbaric way of thinking. You disappoint me.」

「Thank you very much your majesty! It was because I want to see your majesty making such face that I also did my best!」

I didn't feel anything even if he was disappointed in me.

In the first place Roland didn't have any kind of expectation toward me.

Because I worked hard was also to see Roland's frustrated face, this development was just like what I expected.

「I want to send you to the gallows right this instant.」

「My queen! His majesty is saying something like that!」

When I asked for help from Mylene-san, Roland said 「You little shit, that's cowardly!」 in panic.

Mylene-san warned Roland with an exasperated face.

「We can't possibly send the one who saved Julius to the gallows. Besides, this is a good chance for the kingdom instead. Leon-kun—no, Leon-dono has to be rewarded for his effort.」

It seemed I would receive reward.

Until now I got unreasonably promoted as reward, but at this moment I was a count with lower third rank! I was in a position where I couldn't climb up any higher.

That was why the reward wouldn't be any more promotion, so I could accept it happily.

—Even so, how did I climb up the rank until this high?

Even I myself was confused.

Roland averted his face from me.

That was childish of him, but I was an adult so I shall forgive him.

Mylene-san talked about the plan going ahead.

「Thanks to Leon-dono, we were able to learn about the internal conditions of the commonwealth in detail. I already heard before that they were worshipping the sacred tree, but to think that tree also gave such a great benefit for the commonwealth.」

Weren't they too ignorant of the internal conditions of the commonwealth?

I was harboring such doubt, but I was only thinking that because I had knowledge from my previous life.

In this world, the propagation of information was shockingly slow.

There was also problem with the credibility of said information.

There were also a lot of stories that couldn't be ascertained whether they were a lie or really true, it caused a problem of sorting which of the information was really true.

But, for Mylene-san who put her trust on me personally, it seemed she judged that the information I provided was correct.

That made me real happy.

「With Faiviel House of the six great nobles losing strength, I'm concerned of how Rachelle(ラーシェル) will move.」

「Do you mean the holy kingdom Rachelle?」

That country also placed an embassy at the commonwealth wasn't it?

Holy Kingdom Rachelle was a neighboring country of Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

They had warred a lot with each other because of their hostility with each other.

But, Mylene-san's family was at the other side of Holy Kingdom Rachelle. The holy kingdom was placed between this country and her country.

United Kingdom Repard.

It was a country that was a gathering of small countries located on a single continent. The country was unified by three houses with great influence even among all of the countries there.

Mylene-san's family was the ruler of the country that served as the alliance leader of the united kingdom.

It was a country with a bit of circumstance and troublesome government.

After all the country was formed from small countries that only joined hand because alone they couldn't possibly oppose the Holy Kingdom Rachelle if they launched an invasion.

I was surprised when Rachelle's name came out, so Mylene-san explained it to me in an easy to understand way.

「It's because Rachelle has a connection with Faiviel House. If Faiviel House lost their influence, it's possible they will rely on Rachelle. Rachelle might also approach the other six great nobles.」

Ah, so it was something like that.

I got it.

「Eh? Then, which of the six great nobles our country is close with?」

I never heard anything about it so I asked. Then Roland made an annoyed face.

「There is no house there that we're especially close with. No, I should say that there is none now.」

「—So it's Lespinasse House.」

In the past Alzer Commonwealth was ruled by seven great nobles.

The one who served as their representative was Noelle and Lelia's family, Lespinasse house—however it was destroyed around ten years ago.

It was by the doing of Rault House.

It was related with that Louise-san and Albergue-san.

It made me felt slightly bummed out because they weren't bad people for me.

「Since then we don't get closer with any other house and we kept the relationship between both of our countries limited to importing magic stone. Come to think of it, it has been ten years since then.」

Roland looked nostalgic.

Mylene-san seemed like she wanted to cooperate with some other houses there in consideration for the future.

「Ten years has passed since Lespinasse House was destroyed. We too need to join hands with other house there.」

Because of that Hohlfahrt Kingdom also wanted a strong connection to Alzer.

I could understand that.

I tried imagining with whom this country was going to cooperate with but—I had no idea.

I got no political sense at all.

「It'll be impossible with the Faiviel House, so it'll have to be with the other five houses.」

At best I only understood that Faiviel House was no good.

But it seemed that Mylene-san also had no intention to leave all the decision in regard to this matter to me.

I was relieved because I would only feel troubled if it was left to me.

「We're going to send diplomats there frequently, so I ask you Leon-dono to give your support from on-site. It seems the children and youths of the six great nobles are attending the academy, so if there is any information then please share it with us. Also, we will prepare a position for you so that you can take independent action at the commonwealth. If something happen we will leave the decision of what to do to you Leon-dono.」

This meeting wasn't in an official setting, but Mylene-san's tone was different from usual.

She was in working mode.

I felt just a little bit disappointed.

But if it was Mylene-san's request then it couldn't be helped.

I was a knight and a count of Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

I could only obey.

「Please leave it to me.」

When I said that, Roland said his complaint from the side.

「You! Even though you made a really disagreeable expression when with me, why are you that obedient when it's with Mylene huh!?」

Something like that was obvious.

「Perhaps it's due to the difference in your majesty's habitual behavior? It'll be better for your majesty to do your work more seriously.」

When I said that brazenly, the officials and knights around me nodded deeply.

There were even some people among them who looked at me as though to say 「Tell him more for us!」 .

It told me really clearly just how horrible this bastard Roland acted usually.

# **Chapter 3 – Kick Out the Five Idiots!**

## **Part 1**

At the time when Leon went home temporarily.

Marie was trembling in anger at the mansion.

Creare who was watching her from nearby was terribly amused.

〔Not having any learning ability is really pitiful isn't it!〕

Marie's breathing was roughening in contrast with Creare who was cackling.

Her shoulders were heaving up and down. Her opened eyes looked bloodshot.

Kyle(カイル) and Cara who were standing at both her sides were trying to calm her down somehow.

〔G-goshujin-sama, it'll be alright I say! Thanks to half of the money being hidden this time, that portion is still safe!〕

Kyle was doing his best to console Marie, but there was no visible result.

Marie was staring on the table.

Her household account book was used in the place of a memo there with a message that was addressed to her.

『We're repenting for our fault last time and so this time we will prepare a present that will make Marie happy. Let us use a little bit of the living expense as the budget. Look forward to it.』

Such utter nonsense was written in the book.

Blood veins popped out on Marie's forehead.

Her hands were clenched so hard that there were creaking sounds coming from them.

Cara spoke to Marie while sounding like she was going to cry.

『It's alright Marie-sama! This time we have also stocked up the food supply beforehand!』

She meant that even if they became penniless, they would be able to ration out and survive on that supply until Leon returned.

But Marie couldn't endure it anymore.

『I—already said to them.』

Kyle and Cara averted their gazes from Marie.

Before—the five idiots evenly split their living expense between them and went gallivanting around. But naturally they got scolded by Marie when they returned.

She firmly scolded them.

And yet even though she had told them that it was no good to use up their living expense, those five still didn't understand anything.

Marie too wasn't an idiot.

She secretly hid half of the additional living expense that she received from Leon.

Of course, she also hid the remaining half so those five wouldn't be able to find it.

And yet those five thought that it was stupid of them to gallivant around while leaving Marie alone—and arrived at completely the wrong conclusion instead.

「I had explained to them in detail. This money, it's a really important money for our life here in Alzer, so don't use it as you please. I said that to them!」

When Marie turned around and looked at Kyle and Cara, the two of them straightened their backs and replied.

「Goshujin-sama have certainly said that!」

「I-I also had definitely heard that being said!」

The two of them trembled after seeing Marie's enraged face.

Creare was enjoying this situation because she wasn't involved in it.

It seemed she wanted to know what Marie would do after this.

And then in a good or perhaps bad timing—Julius and others returned.

They could hear cheerful voices from the entrance.

「Marie too will be happy with this.」

「I think there should be something even better for Marie-san though.」

They heard Julius and Jilk's voice, so Marie expressionlessly exited the room.

Kyle and Cara looked at each other once before they shook their head to each other.

They quietly followed behind Marie.

When they reached the entrance, Brad waved his hand.

「Ah, everyone is here. Look, this is our present for Marie!」

The five were carrying a lot of flower bouquets.

The entrance was filled with the scent of flowers, but the amount was too much that it smelled slightly uncomfortable.

If the amount of bouquets was limited to what the five of them could carry with their hands, then even with Marie's anger she would blush and forgive them in the end.

However, the amount that the five of them had prepared was too many.

Chris was giving instruction to the worker who kept bringing in flowers and placing them inside the mansion.

「Place that bouquet over here. I think the vase will look good if placed here.」

They were lining up flowers of various kinds.

With this amount they could open their own flower shop.

Greg rubbed the skin under his nose with an embarrassed look.

「As expected it should be flower when it come to present. When we thought about what flower is appropriate for Marie, it ended up reaching this amount and varieties.」

Marie's expression didn't return even after hearing that.

Nothingness, that was how her expression was right now.

Cara covered her face with both her hands.

「Why did everyone take away the living expense!?」

The five looked puzzled toward Cara's criticism.

Julius made a troubled look.

「No, we only borrowed a little of it. Besides it will immediately get replenished again right?」

The amount of living expense that Marie received from Leon was a lot.

Julius's money sense that enabled him to declare that such amount was little wasn't strange.

After all Julius and the other four were heirs of the royal family and high class nobles.

Their money sense and way of thinking was different from Marie and others from the beginning.

A lot of money for Marie was just like a chump change if seen from the perspective of these five.

They thought that such amount could be immediately replenished again somehow.

Jilk warned Julius.

「That's why I told you your highness. Something like flower bouquets are too cheap. As I thought, the vase that I picked up was better.」

「You said that, but that vase was just gaudy.」

It seemed the worker had finished bringing in all the flowers and left. Then the five seriously pondered in front of Marie just what was wrong.

Marie—was gradually smiling. Kyle muttered when he saw that smile.

「—That's the same smile like the count.」

By count he meant Leon.

Marie who was making the same smiling face like that Leon went down the stairs and approached the five.

Brad looked at Marie's face and felt relieved.

「Look, Marie is also happy with the present!」

Chris also looked delighted.

「It's worth it for all of us to choose the present.」

Greg also agreed.

「It's frustrating that we could only gather this few though. Well, I guess we can just buy more when the money is replenished again next time. More importantly Marie, I'm hungry so let's eat.」

Marie opened her mouth seeing Greg giving her a thumb up.

「I'm sorry everyone. I was wrong.」

Marie apologized to the five of them.

But—.

「I am really an idiot. If the five of you could be corrected just from getting scolded, then there is no way we would go through so much hardships until now.」

—The smile vanished from Marie's face.

Marie clenched her right hand.

「I was naïve. I need to do at least this much in order to educate you lot!」

Marie took a large stride and punched the cheek of a surprised Greg so hard he was sent flying.

Greg crashed on the entrance's door and it was violently thrown open.

Greg's body rolled outside and he didn't wake up. It looked like he had fainted.

It was an impossible feat for the physical ability of Marie's petite body.

However this was a world with magic.

Marie who strengthened her body with magic power could unleash a punch to send a large adult flying.

Jilk hurriedly approached Marie to stop her after he saw Greg was sent flying.

「Marie-san, just what are you—guheh!」

Marie drove her fist onto Jilk's handsome face to vent her anger once more.

「You guys, line up! I'll give you one punch each!」

Chris tried to hold Marie down.

「Marie isn't in her right mind! Everyone, pin her—fugoh!」

Marie drove her fist to Crhis's stomach and sent him flying out of the entrance. Then she looked at Julius and Brad.

*Fuu, fuu*, Marie breathed hard. She was really agitated without showing any sign of stopping with the two.

Brad tried persuading her.

「As I thought the flowers are too cheap. I understand.  
Marie—today I'll present myse—Ifffff!!」

Brad smiled at Marie and showed his shiny white teeth. And then his cheek was punched and he was sent flying while spinning in the air to outside the entrance.

Marie slowly approached Julius while his mouth was staying open in shock.

「Julius. You're the only one remaining.」

「W-wait a second Marie! Just what have we done wrong!? Explain it so that even we can understand!」

Marie smiled—a creepy smile and cracked her fists.

「It's because you don't understand—that I'm kicking you all out!」

「K-kicking us out—fugyah!」

Marie's fist caught Julius's jaw and he was sent flying to outside the entrance.

After the five of them were sent out of the mansion, Marie stood imposingly in front of the door.

「This is a good chance, so I shall test you guys.」

Brad pressed his hand on his cheek with a troubled expression.

「No, I don't know what are you going to test us with but to suddenly act violent—」

But Marie didn't lend him her ear at all.

「What you guys are lacking is the ability to earn a living, resourcefulness! During this one month of summer vacation, all of you have to go out there to earn money!」

Jilk was troubled by what Marie told them.

「E-err, Marie-san? Even if you tell us to earn money outside—what should we do? Is there any job for us to do?」

「Search for that job by yourself. I'll tell you all this, I won't recognize it if your earning come from doing adventurer work. You guys should learn a bit about the society other than being an adventurer.」

The five was bewildered that they were told to search for job. Marie snorted scornfully at them.

The five could earn money by being adventurer, but the more money they earned the more money they spent—no, these guys, they spent money wastefully more than they earned.

This was also a good chance for them to learn about the reality of society, so Marie forbid them to earn money as adventurer.

「I don't care if it's part time job or whatever, anyway go earn money by yourself. It'll be better for you guys to learn a bit about society. Ah, one more thing, the man I prefer is a man with resourcefulness. Do you guys understand what does that mean? I wonder who among you five will earn the most money. I'm looking forward to it.」

Marie's preference was a man with resourcefulness.

The five looked at each other after they heard that.

Their faces were the very picture of seriousness. It was like they were looking at each other as enemies.

Marie showed a bewitching smile in front of the five.

「The time period is one month. Come back before the summer vacation is over. Ah, that's right. It's fine even if you give up in the middle and return home. But, if you really love me—you will be able to accomplish at least this much right?」

.

## **Part 2**

At the mansion after the five idiots left.

Kyle and Cara could be found repairing the door.

Cara was worried for the five who got driven out.

「Will his highness and the others be fine?」

Marie too wasn't a demon.

She had given the five some money that could be used to live for one week.

But would those five really be able to earn money?

Cara doubted that.

They were formerly high ranked and rich nobles.

They never did anything like part-time work, in the first place it was also doubtful whether they would be able to live alone.

Kyle sighed.

「They'll return when they get hungry. More importantly, it's Goshujin-sama. She induced those five to compete with each other wasn't she? Even though it would be better if those five at least work together.」

Cara spoke to represent Marie's feeling in respond to Kyle's doubt.

「But—to have multiple men fighting for your favor, I think it will make any woman feel good.」

Cara said that with a blushing face. Kyle tilted his head seeing her like that.

「Is it something like that? Well, as for me I won't have any complain if those five can quickly open their eyes to reality and return back though.」

They had finished the repair so they began to tidy up the tools. Marie came there at that timing.

Her face looked refreshed after she was liberated from the five idiots.

「It looks like you two has finished the repair. Then you two better fix your appearance right away! Today the three of us will eat out!」

Cara was shocked to hear that they would eat outside.

She became worried whether it was alright for them to act extravagantly like that.

「But Marie-sama, the money—」

「It's fine! Those five won't come back for a while, so we have some leftover with the living expense! Just forget about it, sometimes I also need to reward you two for your hard work every day. Eat a lot today.」

Kyle rejoiced when he heard that.

「I-is it really alright!? I'm going to order meat you know?」

Marie put her hands on her waist and threw out her chest.

「Order them. I don't mind even if you eat a kilogram of meat.」

Cara raised her right hand straight above.

「Marie-sama, a question!」

「What could it be, Cara?」

「Desert—what about desert!?」

Marie showed a really nice smile in front of the two.

A drop of tear trickled down her face.

It seemed she was really happy to be liberated from the five idiots.

「Eat a lot today. We have also finished cleaning up the mansion, so when we return home we'll only need to take a bath and sleep. You two—we're going to party today!」

Going out to eat with just the three of them—the three of them reflected upon just how happy of an event it was.

.

## **Part 3**

Meanwhile.

The five idiots who were driven out from the mansion came to a public park.

While children were playing at the surrounding area, the five were facing each other seriously.

Jilk was the first one to open his mouth.

「Marie-san said it. That she love the most resourceful man.」

That meant, Marie would decide who was the number one among the five of them.

Chris pushed up his glasses with his index finger to fix its positioning while glaring at his surrounding.

「That meant it will be about who among us five can earn the most money.」

The five of them had never earned money in a normal way, but it was a different story if doing that could make them into Marie's number one.

Usually the five of them got along well with each other but, as expected if there was a chance for them to be number one—they wanted to take it.

Greg folded his arms.

「We won't be able to earn money as adventurer but, I'm not gonna go easy on you guys. Sorry you lot—Marie's number one is gonna be me.」

The five were fired up. They didn't want to lose in this match.

They didn't even have any complain that they were driven out from the mansion. The important thing right now was who would become Marie's number one.

The five of them were rivals since the moment they were chased out of the mansion.

Brad flicked his front hair.

「This is a problem that we have to settle sooner or later. Forgive me, but I'm the one who Marie will choose.」

Even with how close they were, they were still always feeling concerned of who among the five of them would be able to win Marie's heart.

This was a good chance for them. They decided to settle this with this match.

Julius looked at the other four and placed his hand on his chest.

「I'll win against all of you in a fair and square match! And then, I'll sit at Marie's side.」

The five glared seriously before they turned their back against each other simultaneously.

Each of them started walking to a different direction.

Jilk said.

「I'll be the winner.」

Brad also called out to the other four who were leaving.

「I'll be the one Marie choose.」

Greg also didn't have any intention to back down.

「You guys can howl as loud as you like. The winner—is gonna be me!」

Chris also had no intention of losing.

「It's our destiny to decide the winner one day. That's all.」

Julius was the last one to spoke to the other four.

「I'm looking forward to our next meeting.」

The five idiots parted.

The children who were watching that saw them off open-mouthed.

.

## **Part 4**

It was nice and all that they parted with each other stylishly but—Julius was troubled.

「I, I don't have money.」

He was staying in a cheap hotel. He was counting his money on top of the bed. There were only small changes there.

「Shit-! I used up too much money at the first day to fire up myself.」

He ran out of money at the third day.

The amount of his money had decreased drastically. When he searched for an inn where he could stay—he was introduced to this cheap inn.

「Even so this place is really terrible. It's like a stable.」

Julius expressed a rude impression about this cheap inn, but that was his honest impression.

From the perspective of former crown prince like Julius, a cheap inn was a dirty place that he didn't want to use.

Julius sat cross-legged on the bed and folded his arms in deep thinking.

「However, this is troubling. No place will hire me. Even though I should have shown them the proof of my status.」

Julius also wasn't simply playing around in these three days.

He properly looked for job offer and attended the job interview.

And yet he got refused everywhere.

「Just what is the problem?」

If he couldn't find any work, then he wouldn't be able to stay even in a cheap inn like this tomorrow.

Julius had suddenly stumbled with his effort from the start.

「But, everyone too must be going through the same difficulty like me. I won't be able to forgive myself if I become the only one who returns to the mansion in disgrace.」

The other four were surely experiencing the same hardship like him.

Julius believed that and held a great expectation for tomorrow.

.

## **Part 5**

The next day.

Julius walked toward a restaurant that was recruiting help.

He boldly advertised himself in front of the troubled restaurant manager.

「I came from Hohlfahrt Kingdom. My name is Julius Rafa Hohlfahrt. Right now I've been disinherited, but I was formerly the crown prince.」

He talked without even hiding his embarrassing past.

It was because he thought to proof his sincerity.

Getting disinherited was something dishonorable.

However he also couldn't bring himself to lie to someone who would hire him.

That was why he introduced himself like this.

「I came to study abroad in this Alzer. Right now I'm in the middle of learning about society. So please, I ask you to hire me here!」

Julius pleaded earnestly. In respond the manager shook his head.

「I can't.」

「W-why!? If you want to ascertain my identity, then I don't mind even if you enquire the embassy of Hohlfahrt Kingdom. Then what if we go together there to ask? The diplomats there will recognize me for sure.」

Julius thought that the manager was suspecting him and mentioned about the embassy in order to proof his identity.

The manager looked stumped.

「E-err, as you can see my restaurant is just a cheap restaurant.」

「I know that. You're looking for part-time worker right? That's why I come here!」

The manager averted his face from Julius and raised his palms toward Julius warily.

「T-that's why, I'm saying that it's impossible for a restaurant like this to hire a former prince!」

「No, I'm only disinherited from my position as crown prince, but even right now I'm still a prince.」

「Then it's even more impossible for me to hire you!」

Seeing the manager cried made Julius thought.

(S-so this place is also no good.)

Julius's shoulders slumped down and he left the restaurant.

.

## **Part 6**

Night came. Julius sat on a bench at a public park while looking at the night sky.

「What did I do wrong?」

Not a single shop would hire him because he talked honestly about himself.

His stomach was hungry, but he was unable to eat dinner because he only had small changes in his hand.

「—To think it's this difficult to earn money.」

Thinking back now, he used up too much money at the first day.

If he saved half of the money at that time, he wouldn't be troubled to buy dinner and stayed at inn right now.

Julius thought.

「Is everyone alright?」

He was going through this much difficulty, so surely the other four were also going through a hard time. Thinking that he stood up.

He became worried for the other four.

「Guess I'll see how they are doing.」

He started walking to stroll around the city for a bit and cleared up his feeling.

Besides, he had also to search for a place where it looked like he would be able to stay.

Perhaps he should just return to the mansion?

Together with the other four, he would ask Marie for forgiveness so that she would forgive them.

He was starting to think that in his mind.

After he walked for a while, he arrived in front of a bustling restaurant.

The sweet and spicy aroma of sauce stimulated his appetite. His stomach was crying so he tried peering inside.

But Julius immediately hid himself.

(W-what's the meaning of this!?)

There was Greg inside the restaurant.

He wasn't inside working as restaurant staff, but as a customer.

Julius sat near the restaurant's entrance where he could hear Greg's conversation with other people.

「Oi newcomer! Eat more! The chicken meat is tasty.」

「Listen well Greg. It's egg. Raw egg is the best.」

「Stupid idiot! The best is protein!」

Greg was surrounded by buff-looking men. It looked like he was having fun.

Julius didn't know what kind of job Greg had found, but it seemed he was doing well.

Julius thought.

(Greg, so you are earning money. I'll also try working a bit harder.)

Greg was also doing his best.

Julius pulled himself together and decided to do his best for a bit more. He started walking around the city again and bumped into Jilk who was wearing a brand new suit.

He was carrying a leather suitcase.

「Is that Jilk?」

Jilk was talking with someone.

They shook hand and smiled at each other.

And then after they finished shaking hand, Jilk also noticed Julius.

「Isn't this your highness.」

「Y-yeah, you look like you're doing well.」

Only several days had passed, but Jilk had purchased new attire.

「Appearance is important after all. More importantly, is your highness doing well? After all I too have no intention of losing.」

Julius became ashamed himself for thinking to return to the mansion just now.

That was why he put on airs.

「Of course. I'm going to be number one.」

「As expected from your highness! I also won't lose.」

「More importantly, what are you doing dressing up like this?」

Julius was curious about Jilk's suit, but Jilk himself didn't find any problem with his appearance.

「Ah, I bought this at my first day. I will buy something more expensive later, but I'll endure with this for now.」

「At the first day?」

It seemed Jilk purchased a suit with the money that Marie gave them.

「However, I'm sorry but I'm in a hurry, so please excuse me for now. I still have another business discussion to attend.」

「Business discussion?」

Jilk left at a quick pace. He seemed busy.

Julius was taken aback.

He never thought that his foster brother and best friend who had been with him the longest would be this successful while he himself was struggling.

Julius's shoulders slumped down.

(Just what am I doing?)

With unsteady gait and such question filling his mind, he thought to go to a place with few people. Then a lot of people went out from a building nearby.

It seemed the building was a theater where entertainers performed.

It was a small building, but it was packed full with a lot of guests.

Everyone was smiling.

「Is there something? Tsu!」

Julius's eyes snapped wide open when he saw the signboard.

On the large signboard, 『The Magic Show of the Extraordinaire Genius Magician (lol) Brad-kyun』 was written.

The guests were all talking.

「Brad-sama is magnificent too today.」

「I'll come again tomorrow!」

「Me too~」

It wasn't just the females, even the males were looking delighted.

「That Brad, he actually has a talent as a performer?」

Julius couldn't believe that Brad was showing a performance as a famous celebrity.

He wanted to believe that this was just some kind of mistake, but he noticed himself was envying the success of his friend and shook his head to get rid of the thought.

(I'm really pathetic.)

He rethought his thinking that he should recognize his friend's effort. And then he decided to search for a place to sleep today.

Then—he met Chris.

「Hm? Is that you your highness?」

「Chris?」

Chris was dressed the same like when they left the mansion, but his arms were holding a bag. It seemed he had just returned from shopping.

「D-did you just come back from shopping?」

「Yes. Right now I'm doing odd jobs in an establishment. But please watch me. Soon I'll be able to earn more money.」

Here Julius noticed.

(C-could it be, I'm the only one—who is not working?)

Chris was talking to Julius with a smile, but his words didn't enter Julius's ear at all.

And then Chris asked this question.

「By the way, where is your highness working right now? I'm working in a nearby bathhouse—」

Julius ran off.

No, he was running away.

「I'M THE ONLY ONE WHO ISN'T WORKINGGGGGG!!」

Chris called out to him in surprise.

「Y-YOUR HIGHNESSSSS! WHAT'S WRONG!?」

「UWAaaaAaaaAa!!」

He became terribly ashamed for thinking that the four were surely also struggling like him and that he wanted to find them so they could return together to the mansion.

.

## **Part 7**

Julius arrived at a riverside. He sat down under the bridge.

He was watching the flow of the river in a daze.

「—Even though everyone is working hard, I'm the only one who can't find a job.」

The four of them must have found job right away.

He got the feeling that Jilk and Brad were earning a lot of money.

He didn't know about Greg and Chris, even so they must be earning more than Julius who was jobless.

Among the five he was the most—hopeless.

Julius realized that and looked dumbfounded.

「If I return alone like this, then even Marie will be disgusted with me.」

He became sad when he said it out loud.

Then—\*clop clop\* there was a sound.

It seemed someone was coming nearby.

When he lifted up his face, he found a man at his fifty there.

「Sonny, you look listless there.」

「—Y-yeah」

When he replied, his stomach grumbled at the same time. He became ashamed.

He casted his gaze down. The man opened his mouth and laughed loudly.

「If you're hungry then nice timing. Want to eat at my stand?」

It seemed the man was pulling his food stand.

The words 「Meat Skewer」 were written in Alzer language. Julius swallowed the saliva that was rapidly pooling in his mouth.

「S-sorry, but I don't have much money right now.」

「How much do you have?」

When he showed the man his money, the man clapped Julius's back.

「You can eat three sticks at my place with that much. I'll give you some extra too, so just come.」

The man had only just pulled his stand. He hadn't gotten any customer yet.

The man grilled several sticks of skewered meat. Julius's eyes brightened seeing that.

「Sonny, do you like meat skewer?」

「Yes!」

Julius ate the grilled meat skewer wordlessly until he finished them all.

Perhaps because he was hungry, this meat skewer tasted more delicious than anything he had eaten until now.

「It's delicious.」

Julius muttered that. The man—the stand's owner asked about Julius's circumstance.

「Your face looked gloomy. Did something happen?」

Julius was troubled when he was asked that, but because the old man had treated him, he honestly told him his circumstance.

However, he only told the old man about the part where he had to live by himself while working for a month.

「I was kicked out from the mansio—from home. I was told to go work for a month.」

「You look like a young master from well-to-do family after all. Well, it's also good to learn about society.」

「But, no place will hire me. All of my acquaintances have found job, it feels like I'm the only one left behind.」

The stand's owner thought for a bit when he saw the dejected Julius.

「So it's just for a month?」

.

## **Part 8**

The next day.

「Welcome!」

The one who gave such energetic greeting was Julius wearing an apron and a twisted headband on his head.



The customers that came to the stand made fun of the stand's old man—the stand's boss.

「You hired a really energetic lad huh.」

「Are you going to retire soon boss?」

「You're already old after all.」

The boss grilled the meat skewers in front of the rude customers while talking back.

「Stupid idiots! I'm going to work until I die! I'm just looking after this lad for a month because he was in trouble. Oi, Julius, you help out too.」

「Yes boss!」

Julius ended up working at the stand as the boss's helper.

# **Chapter 4 –Barriere House of the Six Great Nobles**

## **Part 1**

Barriere House—one of the six great nobles of Alzer Commonwealth.

It was Loic's house. It was a house with exceptional strength even among the six great nobles.

That was why they weren't satisfied with the current situation.

The head of the house Bellange Leta Barriere(ベランジュ・レタ・バリエル) had a stout build.

He was muscular with thick arms.

His face and chin were also thick.

In a glance he gave the impression of a hearty person.

Right now he was irritated with Albergue's weak foreign policy toward the kingdom.

「That Albergue, doesn't he understand that it will be disadvantageous for Alzer in the future diplomacy if he behaves modestly like that?」

A count of Hohlfahrt Kingdom was one-sidedly beating up Faiviel House.

At the surface it was dressed as an internal discord of the commonwealth, but Bellange who knew the truth couldn't stay calm.

The like of Faiviel House was categorized as weak among the six great nobles—they were the weakest.

It irritated him that there was a knight from the kingdom who acted pretentiously just because he won against an opponent of that level.

But if he was asked whether he was going to take revenge for Faiviel House, then his answer would be “no”.

Bellange himself understood that he wouldn’t get away unscathed if he fought Leon.

That was exactly why he couldn’t forgive Albergue’s attitude.

「The five houses should join hands together to deal with him. And yet that guy decided on his own.」

For Bellange, Albergue was—an enemy instead of a rival.

They were fellow six great nobles, but the strength of their houses were practically equal.

And yet, after Lespinasse House that acted as the chairman was destroyed, Rault House served as the acting chairman.

He couldn’t forgive that Barriere House was placed under Rault House.

「Is there no way to take away the chairman position from Albergue?」

A subordinate came with a report to Bellange who was pondering that.

「Bellange-sama—e-excuse me.」

Bellange glared at his subordinate that was hesitating to make his report.

「Give me the report already. What is Loic doing?」

Recently Loic, his son and the heir of Barriere House was acting strange.

He heard that Loic was getting obsessed with a commoner girl. He also caused some problematic actions that stood out, so he had his subordinate to investigate it.

「—The rumors are mostly true. He is stalking a girl and there are even bad rumors about it spreading in the academy.」

「How can the one who will succeed Barriere House acted so disgracefully!」

He thought that perhaps he should drag Loic back to the mansion and scolded him severely.

「But, the girl he is targeting is weighing my mind.」

「Aah?」

Bellange held a cigar in his mouth. He listened to his subordinate before he lit the cigar.

「The Beltre sisters, they are twin. The little sister is in a romantic relationship with Emile-sama of Pleven House.」

「—Troublesome.」

A young noble from a fellow six great nobles was at the side of the girl his son was inconveniencing.

It would be troublesome to hush this up. Bellange was only considering this matter lightly like that.

「I also investigated those sisters but, those Beltre sisters—it's highly possible that they are related with Lespinasse House.」

Bellange dropped the cigar from his mouth.

He stood up from his chair.

「Lespinasse House you say? There are survivors from there? No, more importantly you said they are twin sisters—don't tell me.」

At the back of Bellange's mind, the young images of Lespinasse House's successor candidates—the priestess candidates Noelle and Lelia came up.

Bellange's expression changed.

「Did Albergue miss them? No, there is no way that guy would—is there some kind of reason?」

His subordinate was troubled.

「Bellange-sama, what about Loic-sama's matter?」

Bellange decided to call Loic in order to ask about this in detail.

「Bring Loic here!」

.

## **Part 2**

Noelle who left Marie's mansion returned to her life in her apartment just like before.

Lelia was going out since the morning, so Noelle was alone.

Noelle decided to go out shopping in order to prepare dinner today.

「What should I make today? Leon like both meat and fish but—tsu!？」

Noelle was also helping with the cooking at Marie's mansion. She got into the habit of thinking of food that would make Leon happy from there.

It strangely made her heart felt constricted.

Noelle smiled stout-heartedly.

「I'm really no good am I~. I need to quickly forget a love that's already over and change to a new one.」

Noelle looked at the calendar.

Lelia was marking the date today.

「Looks like Lelia has a plan today and won't return tonight.」

She didn't know what kind of plan Lelia had, but she was preparing thoroughly this morning.

Emile came to pick her up in his car, so she must be going to a date.

「Lelia is really good at dealing with things since the past. —While I am slow at that respect since the past.」

They were twins, but Lelia had been better in dealing with things and highly evaluated by their surrounding since the past.

Her parents were also putting their expectation on Lelia.

「Even though I need to be reliable as the big sister」

Noelle went out for shopping because she was feeling down even when staying in her room.

A voice called at her when she was locking the door.

「Yo, Noelle.」

She heard a refreshing voice, so she hurriedly turned around and found Loic standing there.

His right hand was holding a collar.

Noelle was terrified by that.

When Noelle moved to escape to her room, Loic slammed his hand violently on the door.

\*Bam!\* It made a loud sound.

「Don't you run.」

Loic's yellow eyes were staring at her with eerie light in them.

Noelle showed a confident attitude.

「You—it's pointless even if you do something like this. I won't go out with you. Besides, there is no way an heir of a great noble house will be allowed to go out with a commoner like me.」

Loic was smiling.

He touched Noelle's cheek with his left hand.

「It won't matter with my authority. Even if I get into a political marriage, my number one will be you. Noelle, you're going to become my wo—」

Noelle couldn't endure it anymore and slapped Loic's face.

But, in that moment—the bandage that was hiding the back of Noelle's hand came off.

She saw Loic's eyes opening wide.

(Damn it!?)

Noelle who noticed that immediately hid her right hand with her left hand. Then she pushed Loic away before running away from there.

Loic called at Noelle's back.

「W-wait! Noelle, that thing on your hand!」

Noelle felt her heart pounding so loudly from fear in her chest.

She had to run away quickly. She ran.

But, Loic used his excellent physical ability to chase after Noelle. He grabbed her arm and twisted it.

「Noelle, show me! Your hand—」

「L-let go!」

Loic forcefully pinned down the struggling Noelle and then he let out an eerie smile.

Noelle was panicking because she was found out.

(This is bad. If I show my crest to this guy, I'll cause trouble for Leon again—)

If it became known that she had the priestess's crest, the commonwealth would give their all to secure the sacred tree's sapling to complete the set.

Noelle thought that she would cause trouble for Leon if that happened.

But Loic was strong and she couldn't get away.

「Noelle, show me that crest! I know that crest. I know it. I remember seeing that crest somewhere.」

Noelle became terrified seeing Loic's crazy smile.

When Noelle closed her eyes, she heard a voice.

「YOU BASTARDDDDD!!」

When she opened her eyes, she saw Marie came running and drove a jumping kick on Loic. He was sent flying.

Marie sent flying a man like Loic with her small body.

When she landed, she took a fighting pose.

「What the hell are you doing when the sun is high in the sky like this, you bastard! If you touch this girl, I'll instigate Leon to turn your territory into a sea of fire!」

Marie mentioned Leon's name, but Loic only grinned slightly.

He wasn't listening at all to Marie's threat.

「Noelle, as I thought you and me are tied by destiny.」

Noelle's left hand pressed on the back of her right hand.

She was found out by Loic.

(What now. He found out that we're survivors of Lespinasse House)

Loic stood up and glared at Marie.

「Move, woman. This is between Noelle and me.」

Marie's eyebrows were twitching.

She was really angry.

「Don't get carried away you pervert stalker bastard. Don't you see that this girl hate what you're doing? I'll turn you protectionless just like Pierre.」

When Loic couldn't keep his patience and made the back of his hand shined, Noelle stepped forward in order to protect Marie.

「Marie-chan, don't! Loic is really strong!」

But Marie didn't back away.

「I know that! But if something happen to you here, I'll get scolded by big bro!」

For a moment, Noelle wondered who was this big brother that Marie mentioned, but there wasn't any time to think about that.

When Loic was about to use his magic, several cars came to a stop near them.

Men came down from the cars and held Loic down in great hurry.

Noelle and Marie were watching that happening with dumbfounded look.

Loic was protesting.

「Let go! You guys, how dare you do something like this to me!」

「Young master Loic, Bellange-sama is calling for you. Please come with us quietly!」

Loic stopped still and turned quiet when the name of his father was mentioned.

「Father is?」

「Y-yes! He is asking you to return to the mansion right away.」

They must be retainers of Barriere House.

They kept sending glances toward Noelle.

Loic thought for a bit before he got into a car.

He smiled at Noelle while he entered the car.

「Noelle, wait for a bit. I'll definitely come to pick you.」

After Loic and his men left from this place, Marie yelled loudly at them.

「Never come again, you stuupiid!」

Noelle hugged herself and fell her on knees.

She was trembling with a pale face.

Marie called out to her seeing her condition.

「Noelle, get a hold of yourself! A-anyway, come to my house. I'll protect you no matter what.」

Noelle evacuated to Marie's mansion like that.

.

## **Part 3**

At the mansion of Barriere House.

Loic who was brought back sat on the sofa while grinning.

Bellange who was sitting on the sofa at the opposite side was getting angrier in front of Loic.

「I should have told you that today is an important day?」

「Yes, I know. There'll be an announcement about the engagement between Rault House and Druille House isn't it?」

Bellange scolded Loic.

「Just what are you thinking in this important day!? You should know what kind of tool that collar that you brought out. It'll become a big problem if you cause a commotion!」

The collar that was placed on the table was a special item.

The collar had a chain attached on it so that the person who was wearing it couldn't get away.

There was a bracelet at the end of the chain. It was for the owner to wear.

「Father, this is the engagement ring for me and Noelle.」

「Does this collar look like ring? Are you stupid? A part of the scared tree is fitted into this. Once it is worn, the wearer won't be able to take it off. Forget about it, instead tell me, do you know about that girl's background?」

Bellange ignored Loic's nonsense about engagement ring and whatnot and talked about Noelle.

「Her background?」

「You didn't know? That girl, she is a survivor of Lespinasse House. You never met her at that time but, you know that there were twin sisters at Lespinasse House don't you?」

Loic recalled hearing that from somewhere.

「I didn't think that Rault House would let them escape but, so that's how is it. That's why」

Bellange was irritated.

「This stupid son. If you have a romantic relationship with one of them, I'll be able to peacefully invite them here and revive Lespinasse house. And yet you are scaring her instead—what the hell are you doing!」

If it was like this, Bellange planned to secure Noelle even if he had to be slightly violent.

Loic who was calm right now after seeing Noelle's crest thought.

(I guess father's pride cannot accept Albergue-dono staying in the position as the acting chairman.)

Bellange must be planning to make use of Noelle and obtain the seat of acting chairman.

Perhaps he would place Noelle as the priestess and became her backer so he could make use of her influence.

Bellange said.

「This can be helpful to take down Albergue. I'll immediately bring her here, but don't you dare lay your hand on her.」

Loic was just slightly curious about Bellange's choice of words.

(Father isn't going to bring her up as the priestess? But, it doesn't matter right now.)

It was just unrelated with what he would say after this.

After all, there was a priestess's crest on Noelle's hand.

「Father, I'll be troubled if you do that. I and Noelle should marry.」

「—Don't disappoint me further than this. You and that girl will never marry.」

Bellange said that he absolutely wouldn't allow it, but then Loic told him about the crest.

「This is for our house's sake. After all the priestess's crest has manifested on Noelle.」

Bellange got on his feet when he heard that.

「Impossible!」

His face was disbelieving of what he had just heard.

Loic was amused inside his heart.

(Noelle, you won't be able to run away from me.)

.

## **Part 4**

In a party venue.

People related to the six great nobles were gathering there.

Lelia wearing a dress was participating in it with Emile.

「It's strange that all the six great nobles are all present here even though it's an engagement announcement. They're political rival aren't they?」

Emile smiled wryly at Lelia's impression.

「Yeah. But, enemy and ally can change in a drop of the hat depending on the era. Besides, we are all families that are recognized by the sacred tree, so we have to get along when we can get along.  
」

「Hm~m」

Lelia wasn't really interested.

She was more curious about one of the capture targets.

(I failed. Loic is a jealous person, it came back to bite me in the ass as it caused big sis to be unable to get closer to other capture targets.)

Loic had a serious case of jealousy in that otome game.

Because of that, he would get angry if the main character acted too affably to everybody and caused a bad end.

That was why Noelle was unable to raise a flag with the brocon Hughes.

In the party venue, Louise was dressed up with Hughes standing beside her with a slightly ruffled look.

He had blond hair like his brother Fernand(フェルナン), but his hair was longer.

He was a handsome boy with green eyes and languid air.

He looked a bit like a delinquent, but it gave him a charm of his own.

(He is a brocon, but perhaps I should try more seriously with him rather than with Loic. —It's too late now though.)

Hughes would get betrothed with Louise if his flag wasn't raised at the early stage.

If that happened his capture became impossible. Not just in game, here in reality it was also looking impossible to capture him at this stage.

Emile tried to look for something to talk about and explained various things to Lelia desperately.

「E-err, even so the ties between Rault House and Druille House will grow stronger with this. The relationship between the chairman Albergue-san and the head of Druille House Fernand-san has been good since before, but now they have also formed a strong relationship politically.」

「This is a political marriage right?」

「Y-yeah. That's right but—it'll be nice if Hughes-san can also become slightly calmer with this.」

Hughes was a character who liked to womanize.

It was the same in reality. It seemed he was still playing around with woman even after the talk about the marriage with Louise was going on.

(—Rault House is going to lose their standing and Louise won't be noble anymore anyway. Even so, the villainess is amazing huh. Does she know that I'm a fake?)

The villainess Louise had never try anything with Lelia for some reason.

She was only targeting Noelle.

To Lelia that looked like Louise was instinctually judging Noelle to be the real one.

The two of them were walking toward Emile to give a greeting.

Lelia backed away to diagonally behind Emile.

Hughes spoke.

「Yo Emile. I never thought you're going to come bringing a lover with you.」

He had a friendly attitude that was unthinkable coming from a noble.

Emile looked troubled.

「Hughes-san, your attire is ruffled.」

「Who cares, there are only relatives coming to this event anyway. There are only old acquaintances around us here.」

There were a lot of people they had been acquainted with since a long time ago in the engagement announcement's venue.

It seemed that Hughes was relaxed because of that.

Beside Hughes, Louise looked at Lelia.

「—Is your big sister doing well?」

That sounded like sarcasm to Lelia.

「I guess, she is doing well.」

Actually she was depressed after experiencing a heart break, but there was no need to tell the enemy the detail.

Louise was smiling.

「I see. —Emile, protect your important lover properly okay?」

Emile straightened himself when Louise told him that.

「Yes.」

Lelia sighed after the two headed elsewhere to greet other people.

「She's really sarcastic. She just want to tell me that I'm not worthy to be here.」

But Emile's reaction was different from Lelia.

「Is that so? It sounds to me that she was speaking earnestly though. Besides, Louise-san has been a kind person since a long time ago.」

「What do you mean kind? Emile also know how she is picking a quarrel with big sis almost every day aren't you?」

「Y-yeah. But, I've also known Louise-san for a long time, so」

Lelia was irritated by Emile's attitude.

(Is Emile the type who will prioritize his own family even after marrying and make light of his own wife?)

She became uneasy about her future.

But, Emile was staring with a slightly sad gaze at Louise who was having fun talking with other people.

「Louise-san looked like she was really suffering when her little brother died. She has gotten back on her feet right now but, at that time I couldn't bear watching her.」

「Little brother? Eh?」

Lelia was bewildered.

(From the way he said it, she had a little brother other than Serge?)

Loic arrived late at the party venue.

Loic headed toward where Louise and Hughes were.

Lelia secretly led Emile to a position where they would be able to listen to their conversation.

「Hughes, congratulations for your engagement.」

Hughes made a nonplussed look at Loic who was smiling.

「It's just an engagement, so there isn't any need for congratulations. I've also been acquainted with Louise since a long time ago, something like this is just a political marriage.」

They had no love for each other.

But, Louise made a slightly sad face.

Lelia thought.

(Serves you right you villainess.)

She often picked on Noelle.

To Lelia this looked like she was receiving the punishment for that.

Louise saw that Loic and Hughes were having fun talking, so she tried to leave from there.

She said that she was taking a break and left.

Then Loic's tone turned serious.

「Hughes, I have something important to talk about. I want to discuss it together with Fernand-dono too.」

「—With Nii-san? Oy, you get it don't you? My house and your Barriere House are political enemy right now.」

「Something like that only depend on the situation right? Besides, it won't be a bad talk.」

Loic then sent a sharp gaze at Lelia who was eavesdropping.

Lelia hurriedly took off her gaze and went out of the venue.

「Emile, I'm going to take a break.」

「Eh? R-right.」

.

## **Part 5**

When Lelia finished fixing her makeup and went out, there was Loic waiting for her.

「Yo Lelia.」

「—Loic.」

She glared at him, but Loic paid it no mind and talked to her with a smile.

「Don't glare like that. Actually I have a good news for you.」

「Good news you said?」

「You yourself understand that you won't be able to marry with Emile if you stay like as you are right?」

Emile was a member of the six great nobles.

His status was far too different from Lelia right now.

It would become possible depending on the development from now, but Lelia couldn't tell Loic that.

「That's, true, but so what?」

「I told you don't be angry. I'm saying that I'll lend you a hand so that you can marry with Emile. If you want we can have this talk together with Emile.」

Lelia became puzzled just what Loic was thinking when he suggested having Emile be present for the talk too.

「Loic, big sis doesn't like—」

「I know. It was my fault.」

「Eh?」

Unlike his forcefulness until now, Loic was showing remorse.

「It was my bad to scare Noelle like that. That's why I want you to help me.」

「—Are you serious?」

「Obviously. I myself don't want to scare Noelle. I want to become lover with her just like you and Emile. No, sorry. I'm thinking to take it even further than that.」

Lelia's wariness was gradually weakening seeing Loic's acting slightly playful.

「What are you planning to do?」

Loic's eyes turned serious.

「Lelia—both you and Noelle are survivors of Lespinasse House right?」

「Tsu!」

She never thought that she would be exposed at this kind of timing.

Loic placed his hand on the shoulder of the flustered Lelia to calm her down.

「Don't worry. I'll protect you two. I also want to ask for Emile's help because there is someone targeting you two.」

Who would be targeting them?

Even Lelia knew the answer.

「Rault House.」

「That's right. It'll be difficult to defeat the acting chairman, but my house will become the patron of you two to protect both of you.  
—Actually, I saw Noelle's right hand.」

Lelia started sweating heavily.

(No good. No good, no good! If he learns that the guardian's crest appeared on Leon, I don't know what Loic will do.)

The crest appeared on Leon first.

But, it was the priestess who chose the guardian at Alzer.

In other words, it was highly possible that people would misunderstand that the priestess—Noelle had chosen Leon.

If that happened, Lelia didn't know what Loic would do with his jealousy.

Even if she tried to solve the misunderstanding, it was complicated because Noelle was also in love with Leon. Lelia was troubled.

「Loic, you see—」

「The priestess's crest appeared on Noelle's right hand. Noelle is chosen as the priestess. Lelia, I want you to help me. I swear I won't make any mistake this time.」

「Eh?」

It seemed Loic didn't know about Leon's crest.

「We're going to make Noelle choose me as the guardian. If that happen then Barriere House will protect you two. Will you help me Lelia?」

Lelia was confused.

「S-sorry, I can't relaly think right now.」

Loic apologized.

「Sorry. I'm getting ahead of myself. But, if there is anything then you can rely on me okay?」

Lelia nodded a little.

And then she watched Loic's back leaving.

(Loic is finally calming down. Perhaps, if it's him right now then even big sis will—)

If it was the Loic just now, perhaps she could entrust Noelle to him?

Lelia was thinking that.

.

## **Part 6**

Loic who was turning his back on Lelia was smirking eerily.

(Noelle, looks like you will become mine soon.)

Loic had become really calm, but that was because he had gotten an idea of how to obtain Noelle.

His status was a hindrance for him until now.

In addition Noelle was rejecting him with her own will.

But now Loic had obtained the justification that could overturn them.

Loic sensed someone approaching. He erased his expression and put on a smile.

It was Hughes with Fernand in tow who appeared.

「Loic-kun, long time no see. You have grown really big.」

「You're always saying that every time we meet.」

They shook hand and then Fernand smiled.

「It's my stock phrase. So pardon me for that. More importantly, I heard that you have something important to talk about?」

「—Let's talk at a place where there isn't anyone else. This will be an important talk about Alzer's future.」

Fernand narrowed his eyes.

Hughes warned Loic after he saw that.

「I'm not going to forgive you if it's just a pointless talk for Nii-san.」

「Hughes, stop it. Let's just hear what he has to say.」

Fernand said that he would listen to Loic's story, so Hughes shut up even though he looked dissatisfied.

「I'm in your debt. Please this way.」

The three of them vanished into an empty room.

## Part 7

In a break room inside the party venue.

Louise was talking with Albergue inside the room.

Albergue was making a troubled face.

「Hughes-kun too is a troublesome child. He is still womanizing even though he has a fiancée now.」

Hearing that, Louise said that she didn't have any high expectation from the start.

「I won't look for anything like love from a political marriage. I'll marry for the sake of Rault House.」

「Louise, even so there is no rule that say you can't be happy. —But, I'm slightly concerned.」

「About what?」

Louise looked like an adult woman in her dress.

Albergue looked happy seeing her daughter had grown beautifully.

「Are you perhaps, wishing that you can marry with Count Bartfalt?」

Louise went red until her ears from the teasing remark.

「D-don't be stupid! What are you insinuating about me and a child that look like my little brother!?」

「Ahahaha, if there is no one to take you then pushing you on him won't be a problem though. —Well, actually the problem is more on me rather than you.」

Albergue was ashamed of himself who was trying to make a connection based on personal feeling.

Albergue sighed.

「The marriage will be after your graduation, but go live together with Hughes-kun for the time being.」

「I know.」

Albergue looked down.

「Louise, I'm sorry. I'm using you as tool of political marriage. Even though you might have someone else who you like.」

She might have.

Or perhaps she would find someone like that in the future.

But, it was meaningless.

「I was born as a daughter of a great noble. I have given up something like that since a long time ago. After all there was even a talk for Leon's engagement when he was five years old.」

Louise suddenly realized what she had just said and covered her mouth with her hand.

But Albergue didn't blame her.

「Yeah. I too would have nothing to worry if Leon is still alive. But, my son right now is Serge. I'll do my best until that child become a fine adult.」

Louise's mood soured when Serge's name came out.

「I hate that child.」

「He has become your little brother. I wish you can also accept him.  
」

The break time was taking too long.

Albergue left the room.

「Louise, it might be difficult for you but—you should accept Serge.  
」

When the door was closed, Louise gritted her teeth.

「My little brother is only Leon, whether now or in the past. —Leon,  
why did you die」

She desperately held back her tears from flowing out.

After that Louise wouldn't come out from the room. She kept  
recalling the past until a servant got worried and came to call for her.

# **Chapter 5 – Dense**

## **Part 1**

「And so, what? You were exchanging letters with Deirdre and Clarice?」

The location was the royal capital of Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

It was when we were borrowing a room in the mansion of Duke Redgrave there to enjoy tea elegantly.

Doing something like this made me feel really like a noble. It made me let my guard down.

「—Yes.」

In front of me were Ange whose face had turned expressionless and the smiling Livia standing beside her.

「Leon-san, you were also exchanging letters with the queen weren't you? You even made us deliver your letter to her majesty once.」

「I did.」

I asked my fiancée to deliver a letter to a woman who fit my criteria.

Even without thinking hard about it, it was obviously something wrong to do wasn't it.

I was having fun with the tea time until the middle.

But, I let my guard down after knowing that the reason the two of them picked me up at the commonwealth was just a misunderstanding.

Because of that I carelessly ran my mouth 「Haha~, I was flustered back then because I didn't know what made you two angry」 .

Stupid me. Stupid, stupid idiot!

I sent a gaze to Luxion asking for help.

It seemed my desire reached him. Luxion gave me a follow-up.

『I wish that you two won't underestimate master. —His crime doesn't end there.』

After they heard that, their gaze on me turned even colder.

I grabbed Luxion with both hands and pulled him close to my face.

「What's with you? Hey, what's with you!? Do you really hate me that much? This should be a scene where master and servant's hearts are connected and you give me a back up!」

『Master should reflect on yourself more. How about trying to face your sins including all those sins that are still kept under darkness? —Well, there are a lot of those undiscovered sins though.』

「What sins do I have!?」

『It's a sin to not even know that. Also, I'm being this strict is for master's sake. Don't you think I'm really a loyal servant?』

Don't screw around.

I didn't wish for anything like that from an AI.

You should spoil me more.

Also, what I was wishing from you was makeshift excuse to survive this place.

「Leon, how about you tell us everything? Tell us every details before you return to Alzer, including everything you're hiding.」

Livia hugged my arm.

「Leon-san, we're also busy even though it looks like we aren't.」

Yes, they should be busy.

Ange was acting as the mediator for the second year students, while Livia was acting as the mediator for the scholarship students.

They must be busy with a lot of matters even though it was summer vacation.

「But, we finished almost all of our work at the first half of the summer vacation in order to meet with Leon-san. That's why—we have a lot of time, so please don't worry.」

「Wa~, amazing. Have you finished your summer vacation homework perhaps?」

I was the type who would get serious at the latter half of the summer vacation to finish my homework.

Human should experience testing their limit at least once.

But Ange and Livia were different.

「Don't worry. We already finished them except for a small part.」

Livia also nodded.

「I have also finished everything that can be finished.」

Amazing! Someone like me still hadn't touched the homework that Alzer's academy assigned to me.

「Both of you are amazing. I'll brew even better tea leaves for such amazing women.」

Ange smiled.

「You don't need to concern yourself of that. After all we are your fiancées. If it's tea that you prepared for us, we won't mind even if you use cheap tea leaves.」

I was happy to hear that, but in short her words meant 「We won't let you escape」 wasn't it?

She showed an attitude that wouldn't let me talk my way out of this.

Livia was also the same.

「That's right. That's why, please tell us everything about these other sins.」

—What now.

There were a lot of things that felt like they could be considered as sins. I didn't know which of them that I should talk about.

.

## **Part 2**

There were some maids who were observing the tea party.

There were also a lot of people who were serving Ange in Duke Redgrave's mansion at the capital.

A lot of the maids came from knight family and received education in the academy.

There were even actual nobles from count house, viscount house, and baron house among them.

Among those people, there was also a woman who had been taking personal care of Ange since she was little.

Her name was Cordelia Fou Easton(コーデリア・フォウ・イーストン).

She was currently 24 years old. She had been working in the duke house since she was little to learn good manners through apprenticeship.

Her age was too far apart from Ange and she couldn't attend the academy together with her as her followers, but she was of the people who had been serving her for a long time.

That Cordelia was peeking into the room with an expression that looked like noh mask.

「That man—even though he already has Angelica-sama, he not only lay his hand on women in foreign country but even other women in this country.」

The other maids were troubled.

「Cordelia-sama, please calm down.」

Her noh mask expression became like a furious demon.

「How can I be calm in this situation!? Do you know how horrible the treatment that Angelica-sama received due to that witch Marie? That woman stole that idiot prince who was formerly the crown prince and even shamed her in front of public eye!」

「S-saying idiot prince is too much isn't—i-it's nothing.」

The maids became quiet in front of Cordelia's fury.

「Angelica-sama is really worried that her fiancée might be cheating on her. And yet even though he understand that, to do something like cheating」

「E-err, it was mentioned that he wasn't cheating.」

「The problem is him doing things that is putting him under doubt!」

Last year Ange's engagement with Julius was canceled.

The reason of the cancellation was something that was completely unforgivable. Even Redgrave family was feeling disgruntled toward the royal family.

What vexed Cordelia was that Ange's followers had also betrayed her.

「Angelica-sama was really depressed because the people near her also betrayed her. Even though that man know about that, for him to actually dare cheating this early in their engagement—unforgivable!」

The people around her thought that she was exaggerating but, when they thought of how harsh things were for Ange last year, they also became irritated with Leon.

However, after the war with the former Fanoss Principality last year, most of the houses that betrayed the duke house had received punishment.

It was also the same with the academy students who betrayed Ange.

Thanks to that the number of high class maids was also very few.

Setting aside that internal condition of the duke house, Cordelia was thinking that she should raise some kind of countermeasure toward Leon.

「Someone should be placed at the commonwealth to stand watch over him.」

.

## **Part 3**

Around that time, the matter of Leon was also becoming a problem at Bartfalt House.

Nix who had graduated from the academy was in the middle of studying under Barkas(バルカス) to become a feudal lord.

That Nix was fretting.

「Father, is it alright to just ignore this? That Leon, we don't know what he's going to do.」

Barkas was sweating nervously.

If the story he heard from Leon about what happened at the commonwealth was true, it seemed he was picking a fight against a great noble house.

Not just that—.

「I can't face Duke Redgrave like this.」

—He was also suspected to be cheating.

The person himself denied it, Angelica and Livia were also accepting it.

But, he couldn't help but feel uneasy.

After all this was Leon they were talking about.

Nix was in tenterhooks.

「I don't think that Leon will cheat. That guy is completely a wuss when it come to woman after all.」

Barkas looked coldly at Nix who was saying that.

「You're also the same. You haven't found a marriage partner even though you have graduated from the academy aren't you?」

「I have a special circumstance! Besides, I never imagined that big brother Lud—sorry, I mean Ludward(ルートアート) would get disinherited!」

There was a circumstance with Nix.

「Let's return to the topic. I think that if it's Leon then he won't cheat. I believe in him but—that guy, should I say that he is strangely loved by women—he is oddly popular with some type of woman.」

It wasn't just Ange and Livia.

Leon was also close with noble ladies like Clarice and Deirdre.

Barkas covered his face with both hands.

「Don't say it. I don't want to recall it. My stomach felt like they were sawed. Someone like Prime Minister Barnard was asking me 『What do you think about my daughter?』. The prime minister himself you know!?」

Even Barkas would be troubled if someone who was far higher than him like they were above the clouds brought a marriage discussion to him.

Bartfalt House was just a baron family located at the countryside.

「Father, what are we going to do if the same thing happen to Leon at Alzer? Don't you think it'll become really troublesome if a noble woman there is approaching him? Besides, that guy is also a man—the possibility of him cheating isn't zero.」

If that happened, they didn't know what Redgrave House would do.

The only thing Nix and Barkas could do in that case would be apologizing for the misconduct of their family member.

Leon's mother Luce(リュース) arrived while the two were in low spirits like that.

「It's pathetic for two men to be looking down like that together.」

「Even though you say that, this is a big problem.」

「In that case, we should also prepare someone to chaperon him over there.」

「Chaperone?」

Barkas tilted his head, the maid Yumeria(ユメリア) entered into the room.

Her appearance looked like a young girl, but large objects were dangling down from her chest.

She was an elf woman and older than anybody here.

But, she was treated as somebody younger because of her appearance and her conduct.

「E-excuse me! I want to volunteer myself!」



Nix looked troubled.

「No, I know that Yumeria-san is a hard worker, but being a chaperon means watching over Leon over there. I don't think Yumeria-san can—ouch!」

Luce slapped Nix's head. She explained to him with a small voice.

「You're stupid. This girl's kid is at the commonwealth right? She is always worried about him, so let's allow her to meet him while making her take care of Leon too.」

Nix understood after hearing that.

Yumeria had a son named Kyle.

Right now that son was taking care of Marie. He was living far away from here.

「I-I understand. So that's how it is. Then I guess we should let Yumeria-san board Leon's ship.」

Barkas also nodded.

This decision was simply the good intention of the three to let Yumeria worked near her son.

—Yes, this decision was from good intention.

.

## **Part 4**

I stopped by at home before returning to the commonwealth.

I was going to part from Ange and Livia there.

I was going to go back to life of overseas student at Alzer once more.

「—Most of my precious summer vacation here is used up by meetings.」

I thought I would be able to relax at the kingdom, but I never thought that it would take so many days to discuss about the plan ahead.

Luxion admonished my optimistic attitude.

『Did master seriously think that you will be able to do nothing but having fun in your vacation with your position? Currently at the surface it's a turning point for the diplomatic relations between the kingdom and the commonwealth. The kingdom and the commonwealth are both greatly busy. Behind the scene—it's also an extremely important period in the otome game aspect that master mentioned.』

「I know that—even so I want to have a vacation.」

『Master has been able to rest enough though?』

I understood that right now was an important period.

We had to find a lover for Noelle.

If not the world would be in danger.

And the last boss of that otome game's sequel was Albergue-san who controlled the sacred tree was it?

They said that the sacred tree would become a monster and went into a rampage.

Spare me from that.

In the worst case Luxion might be able to deal with it but—it would be hell for the commonwealth after they lost the sacred tree.

The sacred tree had been providing the commonwealth with immense wealth until now.

If they lost that, the commonwealth would be placed in a tough situation after that.

In that second game, according to Marie 「The sapling will become the new sacred tree for the commonwealth」 .

Sapling—the sacred tree's sapling, it was unclear whether it would be able to do the same thing like the sacred tree.

And then the sacred tree's sapling—I'd just call it sapling-chan in short.

Sapling-chan needed a priestess in order to display its ability.

Noelle would become the priestess, and then after she chose a guardian who would protect sapling-chan it would become happy end but—.

I looked at my right hand.

「More importantly, can't this crest vanish? This belongs to the guardian right? Why did it appear on me then?」

It was also bothering me why sapling-chan chose me as the guardian.

Normally there was the order of the sapling choosing the priestess and then the priestess would choose the guardian.

But it seemed Luxion had a different thinking.

『Master, do you know the reason why the sacred tree choose a guardian?』

『If it's just like the name suggested then it's to make that person guard it, right?』

『Yes. And then, who was the one who secured and protected that sapling until now?』

『—Me huh.』

『I don't think it's strange for the sapling to decide that master is suitable to be its guardian.』

『But the priestess』

『In the first place, I can't understand that point. Is there really any need to choose a priestess? It's logical for the sacred tree to choose a priestess first in order to understand human. But, the sapling would prioritize its own survival first.』

For some reason the sacred tree's saplings would wither if they were left alone.

They would still wither even if they were uprooted and then put under rigorous care.

Anyway they just couldn't grow up.

The reason why that happened was interesting.

『Even though they were born from the sacred tree, it was that sacred tree that was trying to kill them.』

『I have the feeling that it's mistaken as a plant.』

The source of nutrients for the sacred tree was the magic element—the source of magic power in the air.

The sapling couldn't be grown with just normal nutrients from soil and water.

But, it wasn't like the sacred tree was absorbing all the magic element in the air.

And yet it wouldn't share the magic element with the other saplings.

It was as though it was trying to destroy itself.

〔The important thing for the sapling is master's existence that can guarantee its survival. There won't be any problem even if it put the existence of the priestess as secondary priority.〕

〔So it's different from the game. More importantly, what're we going to do from now? The priestess and the guardian will become lovers right? I already have fiancées. Ah, perhaps the priestess position can be given to Ange or Livia?〕

That idea crossed my mind so I said it, but Luxion immediately shook his eye in denial.

〔The two of them don't have the attribute necessary to be a priestess.〕

〔Have you investigated it?〕

〔Yes. Because it's an information that might become necessary depending on future development.〕

Certainly it was necessary but, it was somewhat dissatisfying.

〔—Tell me first before you are investigating. It makes me feel unwell that you are investigating on your own accord.〕

『I was only doing it on the side while also doing the periodical health checkup. More importantly, I have a single question.』

『There are a lot of questions huh. So, what's this question?』

『Master, as the fundamental rule, the crests that the sacred tree bestowed are differentiated with ranking. The guardian's crest has the highest ranking and the priestess's crest is a rank below it.』

『Yeah.』

『The third in ranking is the crests that are in the possession of the six great nobles but—the sacred tree will prioritize protecting the one with crest of higher rank. If that's the case, there is one story that is strange.』

『What is it?』

『Master haven't noticed?』

Looking at my puzzled expression, Luxion showed an exasperated gesture with his spherical body.

What to do—that gesture was terribly irritating.

『That's why, just tell me already!』

『—Lespinasse House had the crests of the guardian and the priestess. Then why did they lose against Rault House who only has lower ranked crest?』

I too finally understood after hearing that.

That's right.

How did Lespinasse House get destroyed?

Even Marie and Lelia's story didn't explain that.

That question was only get treated as “that’s the setting in the game”.

「Perhaps Rault House developed a weapon that doesn’t rely on the sacred tree’s power?」

『The commonwealth doesn’t have such advanced technology. I have concluded that they don’t have any weapon or countermeasure that can counter the crest.』

There were a lot of weapons that were working by receiving energy from the sacred tree at Alzer.

If the lower rank opposed the higher rank, the sacred tree would stop the supply of energy in order to protect the higher rank without caring of the excuse.

In addition, even Lespinasse House should also have weapons that made use of the sacred tree’s power.

Even if they were attacked in surprise and got caught completely off guard, was it really possible for them to lose so one-sidedly?

From what I gathered from Lelia’s story, it sounded like they got one-sidedly destroyed.

『Master, this is just my hypothesis but—perhaps Lespinasse House lost their crest at that time.』

The story was getting complicated.

If Lespinasse House didn’t have the crests—was it because they were stolen?

Or they simply lost them?

No, perhaps.

「Pierre did whatever he pleased using the sacred tree's power didn't he? Is there any possibility of Rault House using similar trick like that to destroy Lespinasse House?」

『I can't say that there is none. But, isn't such possibility low? If such trick exist, the six great nobles should know something. Also, this is also something that's bothering me. It's impossible to completely erase the fact that Rault House had destroyed Lespinasse House. And yet, Albergue is sitting on the seat of acting chairman.』

Were the other five houses alright with Rault House destroying Lespinasse House?

This became even more confusing.

「—Luxion, why didn't you tell me something like this quicker?」

『I had been planning to discuss this with master, but I was unable to find a good timing. In addition, there is no urgency to discuss about this problem. After all it's a past matter.』

「No, this is really important!」

『It won't cause any big change whether master know about it or not. Master is aiming to reach the ending of that otome game isn't it?』

Certainly, even if I knew about this earlier it was unthinkable that there would be any large change about our plan going ahead.

「Even so you should tell me this kind of thing! I want to know if there is a reason for something like that!」

That's right.

There was also the possibility of us having a misunderstanding.

We were going through a lot of troubles last year because of that too.

『Does master really want to know about the full details? —If master sympathize with Rault House even more than this, it'll be master who suffer. Albergue will die at the end. And then Rault House will also perish. That's the result that master and others are wishing for.』

I recalled the time when I had dinner at the mansion of Rault House.

I looked down. Luxion then expressed his concern for me.

『Master, there is no need for you to shoulder the responsibility for other country too. You mustn't mistake what is it that you should prioritize.』

I sat down on the spot.

Just what was it that I should do?

.

## **Part 5**

Inside Einhorn that was going back to Bartfalt territory.

Livia was talking to me who was currently feeling depressed.

「Leon-san, we're going to arrive soon.」

Livia who came to notify me was looking slightly despondent.

「We're going to be separated again for a while. But rather than that, what's the matter? Leon-san doesn't look well for some reason.」

Livia was worried seeing me depressed like this.

「Ah, you noticed? Actually I don't want to go back there. As I thought my own birthplace is number one.」

I showed her a smile, but I faltered in front of Livia's serious gaze.

Then Livia looked down.

「Is there something going on over there?」

「Eh? How did you!?」

I never told Livia anything about that otome game.

That was why she should have no way of knowing what I was doing.

Livia raised her face and looked at me.

「Leon-san, didn't you go to Alzer because there is something there?」

「T-that's not it. You know, I was going there to babysit Julius and others.」

I spewed a lie right away.

The palace was pushing Julius and others on me after I decided to study abroad.

「—I heard from Ange. His highness Julius and others were pushed on Leon-san after you decided to study abroad. Leon-san, aren't you hiding something from us?」

I averted my face.

I'm a reincarnator! How relieving it would be if I could say that.

This world is a world of otome game, and you are its main character.

—If there was someone who said that, I would put some distance from them.

But Livia wasn't angry.

「I don't know what Leon-san is doing. But, I believe that it must be something important.」

「Livia?」

「Because, Leon-san is a kind person.」

When she told me that with a smile, it felt like my heart—became really light.

Livia continued.

「I'm thinking that perhaps, Leon-san has something that you can't tell us at all. But, please, just be careful to not act recklessly.」

While I was at a loss of how to respond, Livia gently hugged me.

「We will also do our best so one day Leon-san will also be able to rely on us. That's why, please wait for us until then.」

「Livia」

I was happy to be kindly hugged like this, but then Livia's arms strengthened their hug a little.

「Also, Ange won't say it but, she is sensitive in regard to cheating.」

「Eh? A-aa, yeah.」

I was troubled even if you told me that.

Even though I didn't cheat at all.

「Ange is worried. That's why, please don't make her sad.」

「I know.」

Ange was sensitive in regard to cheating because of Marie's fault.

She must be unable to calm down if I was staying at a place near that Marie.

I should be more considerate.

Livia let go of me.

「We will come to meet Leon-san again at the next long holiday. Let's sightsee leisurely at that time.」

Livia smiled. I beat my chest saying *leave it to me*.

「I'm going to investigate any good sightseeing place to prepare for that time.」

「I'll be looking forward to it then.」



## **Part 6**

Ange and Cordelia were in another room inside Einhorn.

Ange sighed and made an irritated expression.

The reason was the words from her big brother.

「Forgive him if it's only one or two mistress—is it?」

He said that he wanted to send someone because he was uneasy after hearing that Leon was living in Marie's mansion.

Her father and big brother were also thinking that such thing was certainly bad.

And so they suggested to send someone from Redgrave House there.

But at the same time, Ange's big brother Gilbert(ギルバート) also said 「It's fine for you to refuse Marie no matter what, but it'll be better if you don't meddle too much into things other than that」 .

Her father and big brother were also men.

They could also understand Leon's feeling if he was cheating.

The two of them were also indirectly advising Leon about that, but Leon himself didn't notice.

Ange was also a noble's daughter, it wasn't a problem even if her husband had a mistress—she thought before.

However when it was actually happening in reality, there was a gloomy feeling in her heart.

「Perhaps it was a mistake to consult with father and brother about this?」

She asked that to Cordelia who was the one taking care of her in her home.

Cordelia was a high class maid. She was also educated.

「Perhaps they aren't mistaken as a noble, but personally—as a woman, it's natural to be unable to accept it.」

The reason Ange was talking to Cordelia was because she was the maid who would be sent to Leon's place.

Both her father and big brother planned to choose a young and beautiful maid.

The reason was to place someone that wouldn't be problematic even if Leon laid his hand on her.

Ange looked at Cordelia.

「Even so, I didn't expect for Cordelia to volunteer.」

When they were talking of who to send, they gathered the people in the mansion who fulfilled the criteria.

Cordelia volunteered herself at that time.

「Angelica-sama, please leave it to me. This Cordelia will monitor Count Bartfalt strictly.」

「I-I see.」

Angelica was slightly relieved seeing the enthusiastic Cordelia.

(I, I thought to ask her to indirectly investigate what Leon is doing there, but I didn't expect that she would be this motivated.)

Ange also had faith on Cordelia> She didn't think that she was a bad choice to be sent to Leon's place.

「To be honest, I'm not planning to restrain Leon. That's why, I intend to forgive him if it's just a little bit of playing around.」

「Is that alright?」

「It's fine. I won't ask for anything more if he just returns to us at the end.」

To be honest she couldn't forgive anything like that, but Ange was scared that Leon would hate her if she seriously restrained him.

However.

「However, pay attention to Marie. She is a woman who ensnared five people at such a short time. In the worst case that Leon fall into Marie's hand—I don't think that such thing will happen but, it still weighed my mind.」

Ange too thought that they had to be on guard against Marie no matter what.

Cordelia placed her hand on her chest.

「I shall keep it in mind.」

.

## **Part 7**

When I returned home, I was told to bring along one person with me to the commonwealth.

It was the elf Yumeria-san.

She was bringing a large traveling bag and standing in front of me nervously.

「—Eh? Yumeria-san is coming along too?」

「P-please take care of me! —I bit my tongue」

She couldn't talk correctly and became teary eyed.

No, was it painful because she bit her tongue?

Well, it didn't matter. Even so, this person was really cute even though she already had a child.

Mother talked to me.

「She will watch over you so that you don't do anything wrong over there. Also, I won't forgive you if you lay your hand on her.」

My family wouldn't trust me.

「I won't do anything like that. I already have fiancées.」

「That's why we are worrying like this. Don't you dare do anything that will make those two cry.」

「I understand that.」

When I said that, mother made a doubtful face that said 「Do you really understand?」 .

Next father talked to me.

「Well, her acting as your chaperone is only half of the reason. Look, Yumeria-chan has been working hard at our place, so this is like a reward for her.」

「Reward? Ah, that.」

Yumeria-san's son, Kyle was at the commonwealth.

She must wished to be together with her son.

「Got it. I understand.」

「Do you really understand? We're also serious with her being your chaperone.」

「So even father is suspecting me of cheating!？」

「Yeah.」

He answered instantly. I was trembling while sending my gaze to Nix who had been staying quiet since just now.

Nix made a condescending smile at me.

「Do you think that you won't be doubted even though there are the cases with Clarice-san and Deirdre-san? You're really happy-go-lucky. Or rather, I'm really jealous. Even though I don't have any girl who is close to me.」

I couldn't say anything back after Clarice-senpai and Deirdre-senpai's name came out.

C-certainly, we were exchanging letters.

But, could an exchange of letter be counted as cheating?

「Eh? But I heard that right now girl will approach even if the man doesn't do anything though?」

「It's troublesome because I have you as little brother.」

Nix put his hand on his face with a complicated expression.

.

## **Part 8**

Now, time to depart—it was at that timing Ange introduced me to the maid called Cordelia-san.

「My name is Cordelia Fou Easton. Please call me Cordelia without any reservation, my lord.」

She gave me a polite greeting, but it felt like there was a wall between me and her.

Yumeria-san was also a maid at our home, but her eyes sparkled when she saw Cordelia-san.

「My lord, she is a real maid. Amazing!」

「Yumeria-san is also a maid you know? But certainly this person seems really prim and proper.」

Of course her conduct was tidy, but for her to have Fou as her middle name meant that she came from a background of feudal lord noble.

She was a daughter from a good family.

When a house reached the level of a duke house, even the people working there would have relatively high status.

Not all of them.

Even so, there were also people like this.

Ange introduced Cordelia-san to me.

「I also have a complete trust on Cordelia. I intend to have her take care of you over there Leon.」

「Eh? But there is Yumeria-san already.」

Then Yumeria-san raised her hand slightly.

「E-excuse me, I'm also ordered to take care of Leon-sama though？」

Livia made a troubled face and looked at Ange.

「We should talk with father-in-law beforehand.」

Ange also nodded, but she said this wasn't a problem.

「Two will be better than one. There is nothing better than having a lot of helper. It'll be a problem to have too many employees, but two people should be just right.」

Cordelia-san looked at me firmly.

「Please treat me well, my lord.」

Yumeria-san also imitated her and bowed her head.

「P-please treat me well! My lord」

I asked the two in front of me to stop calling me 'my lord'.

「Just call me Leon. I'm not used getting called my lord.」

Then Luxion came near me and stopped around my right shoulder. It seemed that Einhorn had finished the preparation.

『Master, the preparation for the departure is finished. There is also no problem with the luggage.』

「I see.」

I looked toward Angelica and said my farewell once more.

「Then, I'm going.」

Livia placed her hands behind her and threw out her chest with a smile.

「Please stay healthy over there.」

Ange was at a loss of what to say, but her expression immediately returned to her usual confident expression.

「Go. We're going there to meet you again at the next long holiday.」

I waved my hand in farewell to the two before boarding Einhorn with Yumeria-san and Cordelia-san in tow.

I was going back to Alzer Commonwealth where a lot of problems were piling up.

To be honest—I didn't want to go back.

# ***Chapter 6 – The Destined Person***

.

## ***Part 1***

Marie's mansion was quiet.

Part of it was because the usually noisy five idiots were gone, but it was also because of the dark and gloomy atmosphere.

It was already night. Marie planned to sleep when this was over.

Cara talked to Marie who was in such state.

「Marie-sama, about Noelle-san」

「Was there something?」

「She had lived together with us before this too, so there's nothing troubling. But, how should I say it, it's like she is putting on a brave face. Sometimes she will look very depressed.」

The day Marie saved Noelle.

Actually Creare was monitoring Noelle's situation. Because of that they managed to notice Loic's approach.

Marie made it in time to protect Noelle, but her condition was strange.

「—I see. I'll take care of it, so Cara, you go rest already.」

「Y-yes.」

Marie ordered Cara to rest and stopped writing on her household account book. She held her head while lying on the table.

「Stupid big bro. What am I going to do now」

—The priestess's crest had appeared on the back of Noelle's right hand.

Leon had returned to the kingdom before knowing that.

Luxion's main body was also returning temporarily to the kingdom, so this news still hadn't reached Leon.

She intended to report this later because Leon would return soon.

Creare was with her right now so she was reassured, but the problem wasn't the crest but Noelle herself.

(Why does she have to fall in love with big bro!? What's good from him? His personality is bad, his mouth is bad, his appearance is average, well yeah he's good in earning money. In the matter of resourcefulness than big bro is exceptional—oh no. Perhaps big bro is actually someone amazing.)

Compared to Julius and others, the like of Leon wouldn't even enter into a consideration—it was something that she couldn't say.

Leon had obtained Luxion and his status right now was a count.

In addition he had just obtained reparation money from the commonwealth, so he was also rich.

If she closed her eyes toward his bad personality and mouth, then he was a really excellent find.

「Hah! That's not it. The problem is big bro! I've noticed from some time ago that Noelle harbor a feeling to big bro, but he himself doesn't notice that.」

Marie had noticed since Leon and Noelle came to this mansion.

Noelle was conscious toward Leon.

But Leon didn't realize that.

Just before the summer vacation arrived, Noelle was blatantly making appeal at Leon, and yet—he didn't even notice it.

(Really, just why do you hate dense character so much? You're a dense character yourself. What's more you're the super dense type!)

Leon hated dense character in the story where they wouldn't notice the feeling of the opposite sex, but he didn't notice at all that he had been standing in the same position.

Marie was worrying whether she should say anything.

Leon had two fiancées—she should say that from the start, but she couldn't say it when she saw how happy Noelle was.

Noelle was a really good girl.

She would help with housework while staying in this mansion. Her bright and candid personality wasn't unpleasant even between fellow girls.

To be honest, she even wanted to cheer for Noelle.

Thanks to that she was unable to say the truth to Noelle.

She felt guilty because of that.

(I should have told her faster.)

She was irritated to Leon who didn't notice Noelle's feeling at all.

(Big bro was also like that. Does he know how much Noelle was appealing to him? It made me angry just from watching it.)

It was infuriating, but the problem wouldn't be resolved just by feeling angry.

Marie gave up and decided to talk with Noelle.

She went to Noelle's room.

.

## **Part 2**

Marie arrived while Noelle was just being absentminded in her room.

Noelle forcefully made a smile at Marie's arrival. After Marie entered they sat face to face.

Noelle was sitting on the bed, while Marie was sitting on a chair.

「What do you want to talk about at this late?」

Noelle didn't understand why Marie visited her room.

That was why she asked, but Marie apologized to her.

「I'm sorry. If only I told you faster」

She guessed what Marie wanted to say just from that.

Noelle also wished that Marie would tell her sooner, but she looked down and shook her head.

「It's fine. I was just getting excited by myself. It's not strange for someone like Leon-kun to have fiancée. A-as I thought, the good men are sold out quickly.」

Ahahaha, Noelle laughed cheerfully but—it made her wanted to cry.

Marie was looking sadly at Noelle.

「Just what is good from Leon?」

「You are asking me that now? Well, it's fine though. It felt reassuring when I was with him. It's something precious for me to be able to stay at someone's side without needing to worry about anything. I was even thinking that it wouldn't be bad to follow Leon back to his country like this.」

The matter of Lespinasse House.

The matter of priestess.

And then the matter of Alzer Commonwealth.

She came to think that she wanted to go with him even if she had to throw away various things.

(So in the end, it's impossible to get away from the sacred tree.)

Wasn't it felt like the sacred tree wouldn't let anyone get away once they got involved with it? That was how it felt to her.

Noelle glanced briefly at the bandage around her right hand.

And then she told Marie a certain story.

「Marie-chan, do you know? There's a famous story in Alzer.」

「What is it?」

「There are a guardian and a priestess in Alzer, though there aren't any right now. The priestess was turning out from among the female of a certain family for generations.」

Lespinasse House was a house with woman as the head of the house.

That was because only woman could inherit the priestess's crest.

「But, only the guardian's crest cannot be inherited. The priestess will choose the man in that generation who she believe to be the one most worthy.」

The crests of the priestess and the six great nobles were passed down based on bloodline, but only the guardian was chosen based on the person's real strength.

And then it was the priestess who chose the guardian.

Marie was calm.

「I don't know the detail, but I think I've heard about it.」

「Ah, so you know. Then I'll just say the conclusion—the priestess can choose someone she loves as the guardian. And then the guardian's crest will appear for the first time when the guardian also loves the priestess. That sounds really romantic right?」

Marie agreed that it was romantic, but there was something that bothered her.

「But, the guardian is fundamentally chosen from among the six great nobles isn't it?」

「Yes. Well, that's because it's someone strong who will be chosen as the guardian, while almost all of the powerful people in the commonwealth are those who have crest. The exception of that—is just one person I think?」

That was her own father.

Her father didn't come from the six great nobles, in addition he didn't have a crest.

Her mother chose her father who was such a person.

「—That's why, there is a legend that if you become the priestess, then any kind of impossible love will come true.」

But, Noelle's love didn't come true.

(As I thought, it's just a legend.)

Noelle said.

「If, if—the priestess's crest appeared on me, do you think that the guardian's crest will appear on Leon?」

Marie made a serious expression toward her question.

And then she closed her eyes and nodded.

「He would surely get chosen.」

「Is that so? Then—that's great.」

Her heart was weakening.

She wanted to tell someone about the priestess's crest right away and asked that person to help her.

That person in Noelle's imagination was Leon, but she then shook her head.

「Aa~, as I thought heartbreak is really painful. Sorry, please give me a bit more time. I'll be able to forget about Leon after a while.」

To be honest, Noelle right now was thinking that she was glad Leon was gone from her side.

.

## **Part 3**

After Marie left Noelle's room, she held her head in her hands.

(SHE IS SERIOUSLY ILLLLL! Rather, does she also forget that I was there when the priestess's crest appeared on her hand!? Certainly it would be strange if I know about the priestess's crest though! But you should be more on your guard!)

They had lived together until now, but Noelle never gave any hint that she was a survivor of Lespinasse House.

And yet it was completely obvious that she had obtained a crest.

She often looked at the back of her right hand and sighed.

(BIG BRO YOU IDIOTTTT!! Just how did you mess up so seriously like this!)

Marie cursed Leon who wasn't here.

The person that Noelle chose was Leon of all people.

If Leon didn't have any fiancée, than even Marie would fully support them.

However she couldn't do that because there were Ange and Livia.

(What now. With Noelle state right now, it really doesn't look like she will be able to find her next love.)

If they were unlucky, Noelle's state might drag on for several years.

That would be no good.

They would graduate the academy first at that rate.

If they were unlucky, Noelle might even say something like *Perhaps it would be better to stay single like this?* in her current state.

(Man. Anyway I need to introduce Noelle to a man—aa, no good. I can't think of anyone who will work. Shit! What should I do now!)

.

## **Part 4**

The location was the mansion of Druille House.

Loic was invited there.

He was talking with Fernand who was making a stiff expression.

「—Dragging down Rault House from the seat of acting chairman?  
Thast's really extreme of you Loic-kun.」

「Is that so?」

Loic was calmly thinking of the method to obtain Noelle.

There was someone who would be a hindrance at that time.

It wasn't Albergue. It was Louise.

Louise often picked a quarrel with Noelle, but because of that he was unable to do anything a lot of times.

In addition, it would also be difficult to convince his father if Rault House stayed as the acting chairman.

Fernand sent him a sharp gaze.

「Druille House has a debt with Rault House. Albergue-dono acted as my backer when I succeeded as the head of the house despite my youth.」

「I know. If I remember right, the two houses has been strongly connected since two generations ago isn't it?」

「It's good that you understand.」

The blood connection between the six great nobles was also thick.

It was said that only a member of six great nobles was worthy for another member of the six great nobles.

But, because of that their blood became too close to each other.

Louise wasn't married to Fernand was also mostly because of that.

His little brother Hughes was born from a different mother. The blood of his mother was distant from Rault House so it was Hughes and Louise who were betrothed to each other.

Fernand had been designated to be the head of the house since the beginning. Hughes also had no complaint about that, so the relationship between the brothers was good.

But, even this connection was changing following the passing of time.

In fact, there was also a period when Druille House was in conflict with Rault House a long time ago. There was also a period when the connection between Barriere House and Rault House was strong.

Their relationship varied depending on the era.

Loic also knew that Fernand was in Albergue's debt.

But he also knew Fernand's character very well.

(This person look mild, but he is actually the one with the strongest patriotism for Alzer.)

「I brought this talk to you even knowing about your debt to Albergue-dono. Fernand-san should also understand. That Albergue-dono isn't fitting to be the acting chairman. The proof is his weak attitude toward the kingdom.」

Fernand's expression turned grim.

「He isn't just showing a weak attitude. Einhorn—that airship is already mass produced and there was even one ship of the same type anchored at the harbor before this. What are we going to do if we continue showing a belligerent attitude toward such country?」

「It'll be troubling if he become cowardly because of that. It'll cause a problem for the negotiation in the future.」

Fernand had a strong feeling of patriotism.

Furthermore it was based on the belief that Alzer was a powerful country.

It must be humiliating for him to recognize their defeat against the kingdom.

But he was also someone realistic as a politician.

Loic took advantage of that.

「—The kingdom is formidable. That's exactly why it's necessary for us to take a befitting attitude. Albergue-dono's stance is a poor move for the coming negotiation.」

Fernand averted his face from Loic. He might have the same thinking.

Loic showed his card for this negotiation—it was the best possible card.

「—I found the priestess.」

Hearing that, Fernand turned toward Loic with his eyes opened wide.

Loic continued.

「There are survivors from Lespinasse House that was destroyed by Rault House in the past—they are twin sisters with the name Noelle

and Lelia. Currently they are attending the academy with their surname changed.]

Fernand was shocked once more to hear that.

「I can't believe that Albergue-dono would do such a blunder but—they actually survived.」

Rault House destroyed Lespinasse House.

That was all the young generation knew, but they weren't told about the circumstance of that period in detail.

It was because the related people kept their mouth shut.

The current heads of the six great nobles—or their predecessor knew more about the situation at that time, but no one would say anything about it.

The previous head of Barriere House had died. It was also the same with Druille House.

There was no way to investigate what happened.

It was also difficult to march into another house and asked what happened.

But, Rault House ended up as the acting chairman.

A lot of the young generations were puzzled by that.

Loic was also curious about that.

(It's unthinkable that Albergue-dono would overlook Noelle and Lelia but, is there some kind of reason for it?)

If one was going to destroy a house, then the heir of that house was someone that absolutely mustn't be allowed to get away.

Overlooking them would mean a failure.

But, Loic wasn't really interested with the circumstance around that matter.

What was important was that Noelle was chosen as the priestess.

「The one chosen as priestess is Noelle. Fernand-san, I'm—thinking to bring Noelle into Barriere House.」

Fernand gazed coldly at him when he heard that.

「If someone from that house survive and get chosen as the priestess then she should be put under the protection of all the six houses. A single house monopolizing her is out of the question.」

Those words were also filled with Fernand's real motive that didn't want to hand such large influence to Barriere House.

But Loic had also already prepared a compensation.

「About Hughes, does Fernand-san plan to have him assist you after he graduate from the academy?」

Fernand was suspicious because Loic suddenly changed the topic but he nodded.

「That's my intention.」

「Hughes is a capable man even though he look frivolous like that. There won't be any problem even if he become the head of a great noble house.」

Fernand strengthened his wariness.

「Are you planning to make Hughes the head of Druille House if I'm refusing here?」

「No way. You are someone necessary in order to build a strong Alzer in the future. The head of Druille House is undoubtedly Fernand-san alone. But, even Hughes is a capable talent that can act as a head of a house correct? After all that guy's fiancée is Louise.」

Fernand immediately understood after hearing that.

「It's useless. There is still Serge-kun.」

Loic snorted when Serge's name came out.

「Do you really think that a man who is aiming to become something like an adventurer will really be worthy to become the head of a great noble house? Besides, that guy hates the six great nobles. Fernand-san yourself want to continue having a friendly relationship with the next head of Rault House right?」

And if that head was a step-brother who Fernand was close with then it wouldn't be a bad thing for him.

Hughes was someone capable, but he had a side to him that was blindly devoted to Fernand.

Fernand was also aware of that.

Loic gave one more push.

「Hughes and Louise will be the one to succeed Rault House. No one will protest if it's their child who succeed Rault House. —Except the acting chairman that is.」

Fernand thought for a bit, and then he made his decision.

「Very well. I shall accept this deal. But, I shall have the priestess become the chairman after she graduate from the academy and can stand on her own. Will you promise that the chairman position shall be filled by Lespinasse House?」

Loic had no interest about that.

(He must be on guard toward Barriere House rising up as tyrant, but if I become the guardian then it will be Barriere House that stand behind Lespinasse House no matter what anyone say. Well, that will be for the future.)

「Of course. Well, I will be Noelle's backer from now on as the guardian though.」

At the commonwealth, it wasn't unusual for the house from where the guardian came from to hold the authority.

Fernand said that he wouldn't allow Barriere House to monopolize the priestess of Lespinasse House in the future too.

Fernand made a pained expression.

His conscience must be prickling him because of his betrayal toward Albergue.

But, Loic didn't pay it any mind.

(So being in Albergue-dono's debt only goes this far. He immediately betray him when he learn that he'll be able to obtain Rault House's strength. But, I'll have you be useful for me—Fernand)

.

## **Part 5**

In Louise's room that was prepared for her in Druille House's mansion.

Louise was living there during her summer vacation.

At the surface she was here was to deepen her relationship with Hughes. It was like they were already practically married.

It was nothing more than a show for the other six great nobles.

The reason was because Rault House wanted a connection with Druille House immediately.

It would be troubling for Albergue who was working as the acting chairman if there wasn't any house who would become his ally.

But, Hughes never visited Louise's room.

The summer vacation was going for more than a month in Alzer too.

And yet he never visited her even once.

Louise saw Hughes going on in his car when she saw outside the window.

「She is going out to womanize again.」

Louise didn't hold a grudge to him for that.

Because both of them were well aware that they had no feeling for each other.

Even though things would progress more smoothly if only he laid his hand on her already—she was only thinking that at most in regard to this.

Louise had nothing to do even if she stayed in her room, so she thought of going out for shopping.

Then she found several servants standing in front of her room.

「Louise-sama, where are you heading?」

They looked a bit flustered.

「I'm going out for shopping. Can I ask you to prepare a car for me?」

The servants looked at each other.

And then they immediately answered Louise.

「Certainly. Please wait in your room until we finished the preparation.」

「I'm going to ride the car in front of the entrance anyway. I'll wait over there.」

「No, please wait inside your room.」

Louise was told to return to her room. She felt that something was strange.

(What's going on? The atmosphere is different from yesterday.)

It felt like they were hiding something from Louise.

.

## **Part 6**

At night of that day.

She should have dinner together with Hughes, but he didn't appear no matter how long she waited.

The servants who were serving her were also looking troubled.

「Hughes still hasn't returned?」

One of the servants answered Louise's question.

「Hughes-sama has returned, but he was summoned by Fernand-sama.」

「By Fernand-san?」

He was called even though it was time for dinner?

All this time Fernand was be someone who would scold Hughes instead for never taking care of Louise.

Was there some emergency business?

Hughes entered the room while she was pondering that.

He sat on his seat roughly and grabbed the wine bottle that a servant was holding. He poured it into his glass and started to drink.

Louise warned him.

「That's a bad manner.」

Hughes was smiling.

Louise was curious seeing that.

Normally he would only reply carelessly with something like 「Right, yeah」.

「What's the matter?」

「Louise, something interesting is going to happen after this.」

Hughes said that and reached out toward the dinner that the servants brought.

Louise didn't understand what he meant.

Hughes raised his glass with an amused look.

「Tomorrow is going to be a good day for Alzer.」

.

## **Part 7**

At Marie's mansion.

A lot of cars were arriving in front of the gate.

There were soldiers wearing ceremonial uniform.

There were also fully armed soldiers behind them. An airship was floating in the air.

The mansion was surrounded from the air and the ground.

Kyle pointed at outside the window.

「Goshujin-sama, there are also more airships coming over here!」

Airships with different family crest were gathering.

They were acting like observer.

Cara was trembling.

「Marie-sama, there are even armors flying around!」

The mansion was surrounded.

This commotion was happening in the morning.

Marie who was still in her pajama with messy hair was hugging a pillow because she had just woken up in panic.

「C-calm down! At this kind of time you should pinch your cheek to ascertain whether this is a dream or not!」

The three pinched their cheek.

—It hurt. This was reality.

Kyle held his head with his two hands.

「What're we going to do! Even though the count isn't here right now!」

Cara was also the same.

「Uwaa~n, Count Bartfalt, return back quickly!」

The two of them weren't holding any expectation for the five idiots.

Marie was also the same.

「Creare, Leon still hasn't come back!?」

『H~m, there is a communication that they will return soon, but it will still take time. Yosh, let's bring Licorne here and burn them all!』

Marie was terrified with Creare too.

(Craaap, these guys, they can kill humans without even batting an eyelid! Or rather, will it be alright even if we do something like that? It won't become international problem? Eh, but isn't this already a problem? Or rather, why are they attacking while big bro is absent!? —W-wait, aren't they attacking because big bro is absent? BIG BRO YOU STUPID IDIOOOTT!!)

Marie misunderstood that they were attacked because Leon was absent, but a messenger wearing tailcoat suit came to the mansion.

『Oh, are they going to declare war? Perhaps they're thinking that Licorne isn't as powerful as Einhorn? Then I'll test it on you guys! I'll proof that my Licorne is an even more capable child than Einhorn!』

*I'm gonna shower them with main cannon and missiles yeah!* Creare was getting exultant like that. Marie pinned her down with her pillow.

「This idiot! It'll be a war if you do something like that! A-anyway, let that guy enter the mansion!」

The messenger raised his voice while Marie was in panic.

「I'm a servant of Barriere House. Noelle Zel Lespinasse-sama—we have come to respectfully receive you!」

Marie's eyes turned round like saucer when she heard that.

「H-how did these guys learn that!」

Marie didn't know of any plot like this in the game.

.

## **Part 8**

When Noelle came out after her name was called, the messenger kneeled and bowed his head.

That person must be the one with the highest status among Barriere House's retainers. There was a crest on the back of his right hand.

And then he said this in front of Noelle.

「I'm glad to see you safe and sound. It's my great honor to be able to receive you the heiress of Lespinasse House.」

Nolle looked at the soldiers of Barriere House surrounding the mansion in a daze.

There were also onlookers gathering around.

They were looking at Noelle.

「Lespinasse he said!」

「There is a survivor from there?」

「Eh, but the heiress mean—the priestess!?」

The soldiers drove away those onlookers.

But, it was already become known that she was a survivor.

(Aa~, everything is hopeless now.)

Noelle looked at her right hand. Then she asked the man in front of her who said that they came to pick her up.

「You really come here in force. What are you planning to do with the people here?」

The messenger answered without raising his head.

「We shall stake our lives on the line for the sake of taking back the priestess. If it's for taking back the priestess, then our only recourse is to fight even if we have to face the knight of the kingdom.」

Noelle looked down.

(Even though they know that Leon isn't here)

A young man entered the gate while Noelle was rooted on the spot.

—It was Loic.

「Noelle, I come to pick you up.」

「Loic, you」

Loic looked at Barriere House's army around him.

The airship wasn't aiming its cannon here, but it was prepared to attack anytime.

Noelle vented her anger at Loic.

「Are you planning to pick a fight with these people next after Faiviel House!? Have you forgot what happened to Faiviel House? If you do something like this, Alzer will always be called as a barbaric country no matter how much time passed.」

Loic smiled while listening to Noel's speech.

He looked really eerie.

Noelle got scared seeing him. Then Loic spread open his arms and spoke.

「That's just how priceless you are!」

「Eh?」

Loic ignored the bewildered Noelle and continued talking with a transparent act.

「Even if we have to lose our lives, we will still fight in order to save you. It's not just Barriere House. The other five houses will also have to fight. No—the whole country will fight for you.」

The priestess was that important of an existence at Alzer.

The priestess had been absent for more than ten years—many people were feeling uneasy from that.

It wasn't just the nobles, the people living in this country was feeling the same.

The existence that connected the people and the sacred tree.

The priestess was a very important existence in this country that was worshipping the sacred tree.

Surely a lot of people would fight in order to take Noelle back.

They would still fight, even if they had to face Leon who drove the commonwealth until just one step before defeat.

(This guy, he's using the lives of many people as shield.)

This was Loic's aim.

A lot of people would die if war broke out.

What's more, Loic did this knowing that Noelle wouldn't be able to bear that.

Loic cornered Noelle using the many people gathered here as his shield.

「Noelle, we will fight until the last man for you. What're you going to do? Will you ignore our feeling—no, will you still brush off my hand?」

She heard the sounds of footsteps running down the stairs in hurry.

It was Marie and others.

Marie appeared with disheveled hair. It seemed she had changed clothes in a hurry.

Marie saw Loic and howled.

「This damn bastard! There are things that can be done and must not be done! Don't get cocky just because big br—Leon isn't here!」

Loic scoffed scornfully at Marie.

「Oo~, I'm scared. Scary, scary. There is that white Einhorn anchored at the harbor isn't it? Surely it will also move by itself and destroy us one after another. But, even then we will fight till the very end. After all you're Alzer's priestess.」

Blood left Noelle's face.

Her legs were shaking when she imagined a lot of people dying for her sake.

Loic approached Noelle and whispered into her ear.

「Noelle—become mine. That's your destiny.」

「Des, tiny?」

「That's right. You who are chosen as the priestess only have two paths to choose from now. Will you run and let so many die, or will you come to me and bring peace to Alzer—now, you can choose.」

He said that she could choose, but there was only one choice for Noelle.

「You are, really the worst.」

「I love you. If it's for you, I'll do anything. Can you see just how great my love is for you?」

Noelle raised her hand to slap him, but she immediately lost strength and lowered her hand.

Marie was yelling behind her.

「Noelle, don't be tricked by that guy's bullshit! Leon will arrive soon and resolve this!」

Loic scowled when he heard Leon's name.

「Leon—Count Bartfalt huh? That guy is certainly strong. But, I wonder how far he is going to seriously fight for you? In the end he is just a foreigner. He won't give his all for this country's sake. Well, it doesn't matter even if he give his all though.」

Would Leon stake his life to fight for her?

—That wouldn't happen.

Leon had his own position. He also had fiancées back home.

There was no way he would fight Loic in order to save her.

And even if he would fight—Noelle didn't want to make Leon fight.

(I can't, trouble him anymore than this.)

Noelle turned around.

「Sorry, Marie-chan—I-I'm, going.」

Marie was dumbfounded.

Noelle started walking. Loic stood beside her and placed his hand around her waist.

He roughly pulled Noelle toward him.

「I know that you will surely respond to our feeling, Noelle! Now, let the whole country know of the birth of our priestess! Alzer will be in peace with this!」

The surrounding cheered loudly seeing Loic and Noelle walking together.

Noelle was the only one looking down.

(There won't be any problem if I endure by myself. Lelia—sorry, I got us exposed.)

Noelle apologized to her twin sister while entering into the car that Loic prepared.

# **Chapter 7 – Collar**

.

## **Part 1**

Clement came to the Noelle and Lelia's apartment.

Clement was an instructor in the academy. He was muscular, and yet he was wearing makeup.

He was wearing a very tight shirt that displayed the shape of his muscles very clearly. He was a tall male instructor who talked like a woman.

But, in reality he was a knight who was serving Lespinasse House.

He was protecting Noelle and Lelia from the shadow in the academy.

Noelle and Lelia were able to enroll into the academy was thanks to the endeavor of the former retainers of Lespinasse House.

「Lelia-sama—Noelle-sama was, taken into the custody of Barriere House.」

Clement reported that with a pale face and grieving expression.

Lelia wasn't really panicking because she already knew about it.

「I see.」

「—You aren't surprised?」

Clement usually talked like a woman, but now he was talking like a man because this was a serious talk.

Lelia felt a discomfort from that, but this wasn't the time to talk about it.

Lelia was calm inside her heart.

(With how Loic is doing right now, big sis too will surely be able to accept him. In the first place, it's a mistake that such man was chosen as the guardian.)

Noelle's partner wasn't Leon. —It was Loic.

That was the correct scenario.

「I know that all of you have been protecting us. Thanks to everyone we were also able to enroll into the academy without any problem. It was also—thanks to Clement-sensei taking care of us.」

Clement kneeled in front of Lelia.

Clement had always been worried for the two of them.

He would sometimes come to the apartment to check on them. He would also back them up indirectly in the academy.

「So you have realized.」

「It's obvious if you just think a little about it. —Well, big sis didn't notice though.」

「It seems so.」

Clement had felt it somehow that Noelle didn't notice about him.

Lelia was aware because she had the knowledge from that otome game.

The main character came from Lespinasse House, the house that was at the top of the seven great nobles.

The former retainers of that house were supporting the main character.

「However, it's unexpected that Noelle-sama is the one chosen as the priestess.」

「Unexpected?」

Lelia tilted her head at Clement's words.

「Why? Both Okaa-sama and Otou-sama said that I don't have the aptitude for it.」

Clement was bewildered.

「N-no. It was just my feeling, that if someone is going to be chosen as the priestess, then it surely would be Lelia-sama. I'm not aware at all about this aptitude matter. After all I was at the bottom rank among the knights who served Lespinasse House at that time.」

Lelia sighed.

「Big sis is the priestess. And, what are you all going to do now?」

「Lelia-sama's safety is more important right now rather than us. We don't know how Barriere House will move. Anyway, let's evacuate from this place right away.」

It seemed Clement was planning to shelter Lelia.

But Lelia wasn't panicking.

She already knew what would happen from the beginning.

「It'll be fine. Emile will come to pick me up.」

「Eh?」

The outside became noisy.

Clement carefully took a peek outside. There he found several cars with the family crest of Pleven House parked outside.

The knights of Pleven House wearing ceremonial outfit appeared with Emile in suited figure behind them.

「Emile-kun?」

Clement gasped and turned her gaze to Lelia.

Lelia said.

「Do you want to come too? I'll be in Emile's care for now.」

Clement had to inform the people related to Lespinasse House at the academy about the situation.

Here Lelia was finally feeling relieved that the scenario was progressing on the right track.

.

## **Part 2**

Marie was in great panic.

(Gyaaaa!! Noelle is taken away while big bro isn't here—I-I'm going to get killed!!!!)

Noelle was taken away by Loic.

However she never thought that Loic would come to take away Noelle with no concern of any consequence.

It was difficult even for Marie to choose to resist to the bitter end at that time.

Creare was watching Marie writhing around while holding her head.

『I never get bored watching Marie-chan. I like you Marie-chan.』

『Why yes thank you! More importantly, why didn't you tell me quicker that we were going to get surrounded!? Even though we could escape if Loic came attacking! I would be able to run around with Noelle before that happened!』

Creare corrected Marie's thinking.

『They had also sent soldiers to the harbor. I thought it was strange that the number of guardships that are watching over Licorne was increasing recently. So it was actually a preparation for this.』

『Tell me something like that if you noticed! Are you going to apologize together with me if big bro gets angry!? That's the important thing!』

『How you immediately jumped at your own self-protection is just great! —Well, to be honest, I think there wouldn't be anything else

that could be done except handing over Noelle even if master is here.】

「Eh?」

Creare was eavesdropping at the conversation between Loic and Noelle.

『Even I was gathering information at least. It was true that they aimed at the timing while master is absent, but it was only a matter of time before they made a move.】

「As I thought it was because big bro isn't here!」

『Aa~, that's not it. That boy called Loic was targeting Noelle-chan. But you see, the six great nobles have other intention. It looks like Barriere House is attempting to oust Rault House.】

Marie was troubled when a political topic came up.

「—Heh?」

『That *I don't get it* face is nice! Well, in short, it's an internal strife within the commonwealth. It'll surely happen even if master is here. Even so, that Loic boy is also amazing. He negotiated with Noelle-chan using themselves as hostage.】

Marie looked creeped when she heard how Loic threatened Noelle that they would fight to the last man.

「That's not the capture target I know in the otome game.」

She thought that Loic would be someone cooler, but his action was just totally uncool.

『Even master would back off when faced with that Loic's attitude. That's why, Marie-chan don't need to be that worried. Rather, isn't

this just like the scenario that Marie-chan and master mentioned?  
It'll be happy end if Noelle-chan get together with Loic. —Except for  
Noelle-chan that is.】

Marie looked down.

「—But I want Noelle to be happy too.】

Creare denied that.

『That's nothing but impossible. In the current situation it's difficult  
for everyone's happiness and that girl's happiness to be realized  
together.】

Marie recalled the time Noelle was living together with them. It  
made her hated herself who was unable to do anything.

It was then a carefree voice came from the entrance.

「I'm back~. Everyone, I'm bringing souvenirs too!】

—It was Leon's voice.

Creare was excited.

『Ah, master has returned. Master!】

She literally flew away in order to meet Leon.

Marie gritted her teeth.

(You're too late!)

.

## **Part 3**

Cordelia-san's expression was twitching when we returned to Marie's mansion.

「What is this mansion? It's not looked after at all.」

It looked like she couldn't bear it as a maid.

Kyle who came down from the stairs objected to those words.

「I wish you give us words of praise instead for maintaining a mansion this large with so few people. Besides—」

A cheeky attitude despite being just a kid.

The one who interrupted those words of Kyle was Yumeria-san who put down her bag and leaped at him.

「Kyle!」

「Ka-kaa-san!?」

It was a moving reunion between parent and child.

I shed a tear.

Cordelia-san also read the mood and stayed quiet.

「Kyle, you see! I'm also going to work over here to take care of the coun—Leon-sama. We can be together now!」

Yumeria-san looked happy, but Kyle immediately tore her away from himself.

He was making a very displeased face, but his ears were red.

「I-I'm in the middle of work! Besides, why is Kaa-san coming to other country like this. They should send other people here.」

Yumeria-san was shocked to hear that.

「—Kyle, do you hate it that I'm here?」

Kyle kept sending glances at me and Cordelia-san. It was obvious that he was bothered with our presence.

This kid was at that age.

「I-I don't hate it or anything, it's just I'm in the middle of working!  
Don't bring private matter into work!」

What professional spirit.

But Yumeria-san was dejected because she took Kyle's words seriously, so I tried to patch things up.

「Kyle, I understand that you're at the age of puberty, but be kinder to her. No one here is going to say anything even if you mix private and work matter a bit. Come on, leap onto Yumeria-san's chest.」

Kyle's face went red at my words.

「You're also in puberty!」

Stupid. This was my second life.

There wasn't any puberty at the second life.

「Don't group me together with you. I'm an adult.」

「Liar!」

Luxion who was floating beside me muttered an insult.

『It's like master is always in puberty though.』

「Oi!」

This AI, he wasn't kind at all to his master.

Creare came flying while we were making a ruckus at the entrance.

『Master, welcome back~』

『I'm back. More importantly, has anything happened?』

When I asked whether there was anything that happened while I wasn't here, Creare spoke with a tone like nothing particular had happened.

『Let's see. At most there is only the matter of Noelle getting taken away by Barriere House I guess? Ah, master brought souvenirs right? Marie-chan will be happy for that. She is going to say, precious sugar content get, or something like that.』

*I see, so Noelle was taken away~,* I muttered before I came to my senses.

『You, that's really important thing ain't it!?』

And then I noticed.

The mansion was too quiet.

『Eh? Where are Julius and others? What are those guys doing at this emergency?』

Those guys, they were normally useless so they should work at this kind time at least—while I was thinking that, Marie appeared drenched in cold sweat.

『Oi, what happened?』

『—I, I chased them out.』

『Eh?』

Marie yelled.

「I chased them out! They wouldn't help even when it's summer vacation, and they even used up the living expenses as they pleased! They bought useless things like flower bouquets! What's more they bought tons of them—do you know how tiresome it was to throw all those flowers out.」

She was muttering complains at the latter half. So this girl chased out Julius and others huh.

「A-are they doing okay out there?」

Creare was laughing.

『They're fine. I'm properly monitoring them. Then does master want to watch their activity later? It'll be worth it.』

「It's fine if they're alright.」

Well, I could understand Marie's feeling that wanted to kick them out, and it would be better for those guys to learn about the society a bit.

Even so, those guys were really useless.

Were they really capture targets of an otome game?

.

## **Part 4**

I entered an unused room in order to hear more about the situation from Marie and Creare.

It would be troubling if other people listened to this talk.

『—And that was what happened. Loic threatened Noelle-chan to be his using the commonwealth's soldiers as hostage.』

「He went that far?」

Although there was a problem with the timing, Noelle getting chosen as the priestess was within our expectation.

However, Loic's action had crossed the limit.

What the hell was he thinking, using the lives of so many people as shield?

『Ah, please don't blame Marie-chan. Even master would only be able to watch if you were there.』

I looked at Marie who was curling behind Creare. I thought that it would be better to think of a solution first before blaming her, so I switched my feeling.

But, I wanted to say one thing.

「If it was me then I would stop Noelle at any cost.」

『—I think, Noelle-chan would still go with Loic even if master was there.』

「Eh?」

Marie was hiding behind Creare, but she was still completely visible.

Even with her small build, it was impossible for Marie to hide behind such small round body.

「You're dense big bro.」

「What do you mean?」

When I smiled at her, Marie shrieked 「Hih!」 in fear.

Luxion shook his red eye side to side in exasperation. Then he turned toward me.

『Master, what're we going to do? Will we fight the commonwealth, or will we just watch and leave things to the flow of event—it's master's decision.』

It seemed Creare had gathered information in Alzer.

『It looks like Barriere House will make Noelle-chan marry with Loic at this rate. Perhaps they're aiming for the position of the next guardian?』

I noticed one thing there.

「Wait a second? The priestess's crest that Noelle have—where did it come from?」

Did it come from sapling-chan, or from the sacred tree—wouldn't it be better to ascertain who she was chosen by?

All gazes gathered on Creare. She then said *Tehe!*

『From the sapling perhaps? The data is too few so I can't determine it.』

「You, that's the important part!」

Then Luxion specified the answer.

『There is no problem. The sapling is the one who chose Noelle.』

Marie was surprised.

「Eh? How do you know that?」

Luxion didn't answer.

He asked me a question.

『It will be master's decision from here. Noelle's situation right now can be said to be on the correct path based on the game scenario. Even so, will master still get involved with Noelle?』

Was there any need for us to get involved even though things were progressing just like the scenario?

I spoke jokingly.

「Are you an idiot? If Noelle was forcefully taken away, that means it's not following the scenario. Rather, it's a bad end. This is the wrong path, isn't it? —I'll take Noelle back. In the worst case I'll even take her back to the kingdom temporarily to escape.」

『So master is going to save her in the end.』

That bastard Loic was no good.

That guy wasn't worthy for Noelle.

Marie was about to say something, but then she closed her mouth.

And then Creare told me one more problem.

『Ah, setting that aside, Louise of Rault House has gotten engaged with Hughes of Druille House. Master, you are close with Louise aren't you? Is it alright that you don't congratulate her?』



## Part 5

「That good-for-nothing—he immediately stayed inside Marie's room as soon as we arrived in Alzer.」

Cordelia who had changed into her maid uniform started cleaning her workplace that was in a dirty state.

Cordelia was aware that Leon and Marie were inside the same room.

Then she began calling Leon good-for-nothing.

Originally it was already hard to approve for even the two of them to stay under the same roof, and yet they even entered the same room. From Cordelia's perspective, it was a betrayal toward Ange.

「I have to report this to Angelica-sama right away—hm?」

She looked at Yumeria who was cleaning together with her.

Yumeria was vacantly watching the transparent case on the dining room's table that was filled with a plant.

「Yumeria-san, what's the matter?」

Yumeria gasped in surprise when she was called out and then apologized.

「I-I'm sorry! Err, that—I'm curious with this child.」

Cordelia looked at the plant—the sapling that was put inside the case.

「It's certainly strange. Isn't it too plain to be used as a decoration? Is this the style in Alzer?」

She wanted to change the plant with something else right away, but she judged that she had to ask the mansion's owner first.

「It's too plain to be a decoration on the table, but it'll also be troubling if a trouble is caused because we change it without permission. Let's ask later.」

Cordelia was serious with her work.

But, Yumeria was in a strange state.

(Is she feeling down because her son acted cruel to her? It'll be better to let her rest for a bit.)

Surely the cause of her state was Kyle's cold reaction.

Cordelia concluded so and told Yumeria to rest.

「Yumeria-san, please go rest first if you are tired. I'll take care of this place.」

「B-but」

「—Please talk with your son. There won't even be any time to talk if it gets busy.」

「Y-yes!」

Yumeria left the room.

And then Cordelia recalled.

「Oh no! I won't be able to investigate that good-for-nothing if I'm working here alone!」

Cordelia also couldn't abandon her work. She resumed the cleaning with a frustrated face.

.

## **Part 6**

Yumeria went searching for Kyle, but she stopped walking at the corridor and looked around.

「Who?」

She felt like there was someone calling her in the empty corridor.

Normally she would get scared, but that voice was really—kind.

When she looked outside the window, she could see the sacred tree that was the symbol of Alzer.

It felt like she was seeing a mountain.

Yumeria went into a daze when she was watching the sacred tree.

「What is this. Something—」

She walked toward the window and got discovered by Kyle who was accidentally passing by.

「Kaa-san, are you skipping work?」

Yumeria saw her son's exasperated face and made excuse in panic.

「Y-you see, someone was calling me!」

「There isn't anyone here.」

Yumeria was also troubled of how to reply. She hung her head down in front of Kyle.

「Sorry.」

「Good grief. Let's finish the cleaning quickly.」

.



## Part 7

Albergue spontaneously stood up when he heard about Noelle.

He was in the middle of doing paperwork in the office of Rault House's mansion.

「Impossible!」

The reason he yelled after hearing his subordinate's report was because the priestess's crest appeared on Noelle.

「Why does the priestess's crest appeared on that child—no, I see」

He immediately noticed.

(I see. The sapling! In that case I can understand why that child is chosen. That girl was near where the sapling was.)

He knew that Noelle was staying in Leon's mansion.

However Albergue never expected for the sapling to choose a priestess this quickly.

His subordinate continued his report.

「It seems Barriere House is going to hold a marriage ceremony between Noelle—no, the priestess and the next head of the house Loic-sama.」

「Marriage ceremony you say?」

Barriere House's movement was too fast. He suspected that they might have known about this beforehand.

(Bellange doesn't like that I'm in the position of acting chairman. Is he planning to take away the position from me with this?)

That would be troubling.

Albergue decided to consult with Fernand who he trusted in order to form a countermeasure right away.

「Contact Fernand.」

(Even so, a survivor of Lespinasse House is chosen as priestess—is this also destiny?)

.

## **Part 8**

Noelle was confined in Barriere House's mansion.

At the surface they said they were protecting her, but in reality the door was locked so she wouldn't be able to escape.

There were also iron bars attached on the window. There were always guard standing outside the door and the window.

Noelle was sitting on the bed. She looked at Loic who came to the room.

Loic was holding a collar with a chain attached.

「This will be your engagement ring.」

「Are you insane?」

「Well, listen to me. This is a tool that was created with a part of the sacred tree in it. The collar is to be fixed on the servant, while this bracelet is to be worn by the master. With this, the person with the collar attached will become unable to escape from the master.」

The chain would vanish after both sides wore the set.

But, with this tool the two of them wouldn't be able to separate from each other.

If she tried to escape forcibly, the chain would appear and the servant in the equation would be pulled toward the master forcefully.

It would be impossible to take off the collar after it was worn.

「How can such tool exist」

Noelle didn't know.

「The usage of sacred tree is greatly advancing recently.」

「Hah! So you're making use of the sacred tree. The sacred tree is really generous. After all it won't take away the crests from you guys even when it's used like this.」

Loic approached Noelle and grabbed her hair to pull her face closer.

「You won't be able to escape anymore.」

Noelle glared at Loic.

「Do as you like. But, I absolutely won't accept someone like you, someone who will sacrifice even a lot of lives just to get me alone.」

Loic laughed when he heard that.

「You're stubborn like usual. I'm looking forward how long you'll be able to keep that attitude. I'll teach you thoroughly which of us is superior after we marry.」

Noelle's eyes turned round like saucer in surprise when talk of marriage came up.

「M-marriage!?」

「Yeah, that's right. It's a ceremony to bind us together for eternity! It'll also be an auspicious day where the priestess and guardian of Alzer comes back.」

Noelle averted her gaze from Loic.

「The guardian has to be chosen by the priestess. Besides, it has to be someone worthy.」

「I am worthy! I'm the next head of Barriere House, one of the six great nobles. I have the strength required to protect the sacred tree! Besides I love you. There isn't anyone more worthy than me.」

Noelle looked at Loic.

「You're really stupid. It's the sacred tree's sapling that chose me. The sacred tree that gave you your crest won't recognize me. Too bad for you, Loic.」

Loic smiled toward Noelle.

「So what?」

「—Eh?」

「It doesn't matter whether it's the sacred tree or the sapling. If it's the sacred tree then that's fine. If it's the sapling, the Barriere House will simply have to put it under our control. The Barriere House will lead this country as the top.」

「The sapling is with Leon—」

「The sacred tree's sapling is going to choose its priestess and guardian. If an outsider is holding it, then we will just take it back whether with negotiation or with any kind of method. I wonder how much will that guy sell the sapling for? No, let's negotiate directly with that guy's country. The commonwealth will buy it no matter how much price they put on it.」

Loic asserted that they would take it back no matter what.

It was unclear whether Leon and others really understand correctly the true value of the sapling.

Besides, the existence of the priestess would be indispensable if they were going to use the sapling.

With Noelle under the control of the commonwealth, the kingdom didn't have any way to make use of the sapling.

In that case there was a possibility they would use the sapling as negotiation material.

It was also fine even if the sapling was gone.

What Loic wanted was Noelle. What Bellange wanted was the seat of acting chairman.

「Noelle, you have nowhere to escape.」

Loic pushed down Noelle on the bed.

And then, he tried to put the collar on Noelle's neck.

「L-let go!」

「Be obedient!」

Loic hit the resisting Noelle.

When Noelle stopped moving from the surprise, he placed the collar on her and wore the bracelet on his left arm.

Then the chain vanished just like Loic said.

Loic stared at his left arm, and then he kissed the bracelet.

Noelle didn't move on top of the bed. Loic talked gently to her.

「It's your fault for resisting, Noelle. But, don't worry. If you listen to me, I'll treat you kindly.」

Loic had a relieved expression, thinking that Noelle wouldn't be able to escape with this.

He gently struck Noelle's reddened cheek.

「I love you. That's why Noelle, don't make me angry. I don't want to hit you.」

The door was knocked.

A voice called from outside.

『Loic-sama, there is a call from Fernand-sama.』

Loic clicked his tongue and separated from Noelle. And then he left the room.

Noelle was lying on the bed with her hands spread out and her hair disheveled.

When she touched the collar that was placed on her neck, tears spilled out.

.

## **Part 9**

It was shocking that I was thought as a man who could only charge from the front.

「To be honest, I'm more suited to secretly sneak around isn't it?」

I was sneaking into the mansion of Barriere House—the place where Noelle was imprisoned.

Luxion had prepared a suit that used optical camouflage. It was like I was invisible when wearing it.

I stealthily slipped past the soldiers who were standing on guard.

Shoes that wouldn't make any sound were really amazing.

Luxion was also melting into the surrounding scenery with me. He talked to me.

『Master, I have completely scanned this mansion. I have confirmed the room where Noelle is locked in.』

「Yosh, I'll leave the navigation to you.」

『—Are you really planning to take her away?』

「It's fine to save her if she is going to be forced into a marriage that she doesn't want right?」

In fact, Loic was a dangerous guy.

『After you save her, what then?』

「I'll evacuate her to the kingdom temporarily.」

『That's not in the scenario.』

「It's called being adaptable to the situation.」

Guards were patrolling the corridors.

There weren't just servants inside. There were also armed soldiers. It made the atmosphere felt heavy.

『It's not likely that Noelle will be able to choose the guardian even after she is rescued.』

「Why? Even Noelle is a girl. Of course she can fall in love.」

『Master is the guardian at the present time.』

「I won't accept it. More importantly, can this crest get erased?」

Certainly the sapling had chosen me as the guardian.

But, the order was wrong like this.

It made me uneasy that it wasn't following the scenario.

『It's possible but—the condition to be chosen as guardian is having the strength to protect the sacred tree. I can't believe that romance will be necessary for that.』

「It's the sequel of “that otome game” with pink setting. The developer must not be thinking about the details too deeply.」

In the first place the romance factor was the main point of the game. Any other setting than that was just extra.

It was stupid to think too deeply about it.

『It's no good to decide carelessly like that. Besides, there was a proper reason for why woman was placed above man at the kingdom.』

「Aa~, the reason for that was really terrible. I didn't want to know something like that.」

Someone came so I stopped walking until he passed me. Luxion was going ahead just like I told him.

I could hear the conversation between the servants and soldiers. They let their guard down thinking that there wasn't anybody else.

「The priestess will marry with our young master?」

「In that case, Loic-sama will be chosen as the guardian.」

「Barriere House will grow even more prosperous.」

I didn't think that he would be chosen as the guardian though.

After all Noelle hated Loic.

The mansion was really big, but there were multiple soldiers standing guard over Noelle's room.

Luxion said.

『There are two people in front of the door, but there are six people standing by in the neighboring rooms.』

「Then I'll put all of them to sleep.」

I took out a handgun from my chest pocket. It had a silencer attached.

The bullets were magic bullets, befitting this fantasy world. It would put to sleep anyone who got hit with it.

「I'll take care of the two in front of the door first.」

『Please be careful.』

I aimed the handgun and shot the guards.

.



## **Part 10**

Noelle was staring at the ceiling in a daze. It was then she heard the sound of people falling behind the door.

The soldiers standing by at the other rooms came out in panic. She could hear the noises from outside.

「Oi, what's—hau!」

It seemed that man also collapsed when he was approaching the falling soldiers.

Noelle raised her upper body.

She was sweating.

(Could it be, Rault House is coming to kill me?)

She recalled that day—the day she escaped from the burning mansion. She could remember it even now.

The day Rault House destroyed Lespinasse House.

Surely they came to kill her after learning that she survived.

She heard the sounds of people falling while thinking of what to do.

The door then slowly opened. Noelle searched for anything that she could use as weapon.

However, there wasn't anything like that here. Her captor had been careful to not put anything that could be used for that inside the room.

Entering the room was a man wearing all black from head to toe. She could only see his eyes.

But, Noelle immediately recognized him.

「Leon?」

She recognized him from his body shape and eyes—there was also the single eyed ball floating beside him.

Noelle felt just a little bit happy.

Leon took off the cloth mask he was wearing and held out his hand toward Noelle.

「Noelle, I come to pick you up. Let's run away quickly. Wait, oi! What's with that collar?」

「T-this is—」

「Well, it doesn't matter. I'll listen to the details later, for now let's escape from here.」

Noelle lifted her hand to grab that hand but—she immediately withdrew her hand.

Leon looked puzzled.

「Noelle?」

Noelle recalled Loic's words.

Loic who used a lot of people as hostage in order to obtain her.

She didn't know what he would do if she escaped from here.

And then, it was Leon.

(I'll be a bother for him if I stay at his side.)

He was a man who also had fiancées.

She couldn't stay at his side and troubled him—she didn't want to rely on him.

She wanted to forget him quickly.

Noelle looked at Leon's face.

Her voice was trembling.

「Go, go back.」

「Eh?」

Noelle showed a resolute act toward the surprised Leon.

「I'm telling you go back! I'm the priestess of Alzer. You—shouldn't be involved with this. Don't come to save me just because you feel like it. I am, here because of my own will.」

She said things that she didn't even meant because she didn't want to involve Leon in this.

(This just makes me feel wretched, so go home already.)

She fell in love with someone who already had fiancées, and on top of that she was going to be helped by him.

She was ashamed by herself who could only rely on others.

At the same time, she didn't want to involve Leon further than this.

Noelle looked down.

「—Go back.」

Luxion didn't say anything. Leon closed his mouth and then he left from the door he entered from.

Just before the door closed, Noelle lifted her face and her hand reached out.

She actually wanted to be saved.

She wanted to yell *save me* but—she immediately covered her mouth with her hands and sat on the floor.

Noelle cried when the door closed.

(This is—this is good. This is the correct thing to do. If I just endure, everything should be alright.)



# **Chapter 8 – The Returning Five Idiots**

## **Part 1**

Barriere House's mansion was in a great commotion.

The soldiers who were guarding Noelle were put to sleep and allowed an intruder to come. It enraged both Bellange and Loic.

Bellange gulped a glass of alcohol in one go before he slammed the empty glass on the table violently.

「All the planning will go wrong if the priestess is kidnapped. Just whose work is this!?」

The suspect for this was Rault House.

Bellange didn't even consider that the kingdom would get involved at this stage.

Loic was also uneasy.

「Noelle won't talk. I scolded her a bit harshly, but she kept insisting that she doesn't know the culprit.」

「Don't treat the priestess too roughly. Even so, the guards weren't any use at all even though there were also knights with crest among them. This is a problem.」

There were also knights who had crest among the soldiers on guard.

Even those knights were put to sleep without any resistance.

Loic entwined his fingers in front of his mouth and thought.

(This isn't Rault House's work. There is no way they would leave Noelle alive after coming that far. Father isn't considering it but, could it be Leon? But, he didn't take her away—was it thanks to the collar?)

Loic was relieved.

He spoke to Bellange.

「Perhaps the intruder was unable to kidnap Noelle thanks to the collar I put on her？」

Bellange made a bitter expression.

It was Loic's arbitrary decision to put the collar on Noelle.

Bellange scolded him for that, but it could be said that Loic's action was correct in hindsight after an intruder managed to infiltrate the mansion.

「Putting a collar on the priestess is just unheard of.」

「That's the bond between Noelle and me.」

「That collar cannot be taken off anymore. Don't you dare show off that thing at the marriage ceremony.」

「I have ordered a specially made dress to hide it. Please don't worry. Ah, also, how about the matter of the sapling?」

Bellange averted his gaze from Loic.

「The kingdom's diplomat said that the sapling will be treated as the count's personal possession. I prepared an offer for favorable treatment in the magic stone's trade as bait, but it seemed they are scared toward the count. The kingdom is insisting on the point that

they can't hand over the sapling. If we want it then we should personally negotiate with the count.]

「Everything will be fine if we just obtain the sapling. Let's contact someone important in the kingdom and induce them to force the count to return the sapling. We can prepare any amount of money.  
」

There wasn't any need to fight Leon from the front.

The commonwealth was a rich country that possessed abundant energy source.

He thought that they could just buy the kingdom's technology with money using their plentiful fund.

Even if that was impossible, securing the sapling was an important task for the commonwealth.

The houses other than Barriere House would also move.

Sooner or later the nobles of the kingdom would leap at the bait and took action.

(There isn't any need to fight just to kill a single hero. It's a time honored tradition for a hero to die an unnatural death. Leon, I wonder how should I make you die?)

.

## **Part 2**

Leon returned to Marie's mansion and lie down on a sofa.

Cordelia sent him a gaze that wanted to say he was getting in the way of cleaning.

However Leon ignored her.

Or rather, Leon's 「bothersome switch」 had been pressed.

His little sister from the previous life Marie sensed that and put her hand on her forehead.

(This guy is troublesome.)

Leon was dejected.

When he went to save Noelle, he got chased away instead and felt shocked.

He was delicate in strange place even though he liked to act audaciously.

In the first place, this was the reason why Marie didn't tell Leon various things.

She thought that this switch would be pressed if she told him that the one Noelle was in love with was Leon himself.

Right now he was feeling that everything was bothersome after he got rejected by Noelle.

Cordelia turned a cold gaze toward him.

「Leon-sama, please move. You're in the way. Besides, a sofa isn't a place to sleep on.」

Leon waved his hand lazily.

「Aa~, it's fine, it's fine. Today is holiday after all. Cordelia-san can also take a day off you know?」

「Thank you for your consideration, but I have already received a holiday the other day. Today is a day for working, so please move from there quickly.」

It was a rude attitude toward her employer, but Leon didn't show any sign of minding it.

He slowly rose up, then he yawned and called for Luxion.

「Luxion, what's for dinner?」

『There is still two more hours until dinner.』

「Let's go eat something. I want to eat chicken skewer.」

『Please endure it.』

Leon was like a father who was lazing around in the house during the holiday. He didn't look like he had any motivation at all.

Marie mustered her courage and called out to him.

She did it even knowing how troublesome it would be.

「Hey, Leon—is it alright about Noelle?」

Leon didn't even look at Marie.

「Noelle said that she will remain in Barriere House. There isn't any need for me to do anything.」

「B-but」

「It's something the person herself decided. We can't get involved even more than this.」

Marie thought.

(This guy, he is really troublesome when sulking.)

It was like this since the past.

He would make various excuses and caused the people around him to fret.

Leon yawned again. It was then Yumeria entered with the sapling's case on her hands.

「Leon-sama, there is— a guest.」

Behind Yumeria was Lelia wearing a luxurious attire.

.

## **Part 3**

Lelia had one demand.

「Hand over the sacred tree's sapling? You, do you know what is the situation right now!?」

Lelia casted her gaze down slightly.

「I know that. But, it's necessary. Loic has already changed himself, and if big sis choose Loic then we will be able to get back to the original route. With the sapling, the problem will also get resolved soon. That's why please. Hand over the sapling.」

Marie ignored Leon who was looking bothersome and asked Lelia.

「What do you mean by the problem will be resolved?」

Lelia's face was serious.

「We'll be able to bring down Rault House.」

Leon twitched when he heard that, but that was all.

(Big bro! Get a hold of yourself, return to your usual self!)

Luxion spoke to Marie.

『When he is like this master will only keep complaining and won't move for a while. This has also happened before. Yes, it was—when he quarreled with Olivia.』

It seemed something similar had happened before.

「So human won't grow up even after reincarnating.」

Leon was offended when Marie said that.

「Look at the mirror. You will be able to see someone who hasn't grown at all.」

「You mean me!? I'm still better than big bro!」

「A grown up human won't aim for something like reverse harem!」

There was no arguing that.

Marie also couldn't say anything back so she shrunk back.

Lelia was watching the two's farce in exasperation, but then she returned to the topic.

「If the sapling can also be present, the evil deed of Rault House will be able to get dragged out to the light. Everyone will lend us their strength with Barriere House at the center.」

If Rault House was overthrown at this stage and lost their influence, the last boss wouldn't appear.

That was certainly a good proposition.

Even if the last boss appeared, there was Noelle and Loic so they had a chance of victory.

(But, that's only if the two of them can really be together isn't it?)

「Has Loic really changed?」

「I talked to him in a party before this. It was at Louise and Hughes's engagement announcement. He was already calm just like the Loic from before. He was also regretting his actions.」

If that was true then was there a chance?

But, Marie thought that it would still be difficult.

Besides—after that Loic took away Noelle with that method. It was really hard to say that he had reflected. It felt like Lelia was only under the impression that Loic had reformed.

(I got a bad premonition for some reason.)

She couldn't help but suspect Loic due to her experience from her previous life.

Loic felt like a DV<sup>domestic violence</sup> man acting like a good person to the people around him.

Leon sighed.

「I wonder about that? Noelle is confined right now, and she got a collar placed on her neck.」

Marie looked at Lelia when she heard about collar.

「What's the meaning of that!?」

Lelia looked like she didn't know.

「I-I don't know anything! P-perhaps, it was because big sis tried to run? It won't be strange for her to struggle if it's big sis.」

Marie was getting the feeling that her instinct was right more and more.

Lelia said.

「Anyway! Let's defeat Rault House quickly. If we do that, it will be happy end. You two came to this country for that too right?」

Certainly it was a good proposition for them.

But—.

(But, will that be a happy end for Noelle?)

—Marie couldn't honestly feel happy.

「The guardian's crest is on big bro's hand though? Will Loic really get chosen with this?」

Lelia also looked bewildered when Marie asked about that problem.

「Th—that's—can you erase it somehow?」

Lelia's gaze turned toward Luxion.

『—If master ordered it, I will discover a method to erase it. However, that's only if master ordered it.』

Lelia looked at Leon after Luxion indirectly said that he wouldn't listen to her order.

Leon was yawning.

Lelia talked to Marie with a small voice.

「Hey, he doesn't look motivated at all though?」

「Big bro is troublesome when he is sulking like this. His troublesome level increase three times than usual. You know, he went to save Noelle because she was captured, but he got rejected and now he's depressed.」

「Wait! I never heard anything about that. Don't do anything unnecessary!」

「You yourself kept this quiet from us! It wouldn't be like this if only we knew. More importantly, what about this collar thing? Can you really say that Loic has reformed?」

「Th—that's—I don't know. I'll go to check the situation.」

The two of them quietly looked at Leon, but they didn't know what he was thinking—no, he looked like he wasn't thinking anything.

The two of them dropped their shoulders.

(This guy is useless.)

.

## **Part 4**

I watched Lelia getting into Pleven House's expensive car and left from the window.

I didn't think that the reason she came asking for the sapling to be returned was just because it would be convenient for the priestess and the sapling to be both present at the marriage ceremony.

This must be something important for the commonwealth.

More importantly than that.

「We shouldn't have come here huh? It was a blunder for us to get involved.」

I was asking Luxion.

『Does master, really believe that what Noelle said was her true feeling?』

「Do you think I can understand a woman's heart? —Well, I was getting along well with her, so it was a bit shocking to be refused like that.」

I wanted to save Noelle.

But, Noelle had resolved herself.

Perhaps I was just unneeded?

I came to think like that.

『Master is really troublesome.』

「Did you say something?」

『—Not really.』



## **Part 5**

Yumeria was talking to the sapling inside the case.

「Yep yep, so a place with a lot of sunlight is better you say. Yosh, then I'll place you beside the window.」

It was like she was conversing with the sapling.

Kyle was watching that with an exasperated look.

「Kaa-san, stop talking with a plant.」

「Kyle? But, you see. This child say that it want to be moved to a place with sunlight.」

Kyle was exasperated.

「Plant can't talk. More importantly, has you finished with the cleaning?」

「N-not yet.」

Kyle scolded the dejected Yumeria.

It was a reverse of the position between mother and child.

「Kaa-san, we are employees. Certainly the count is kind. He won't notice even if we slack off a bit, he is also generous so the salary is big. But you see, only someone hopeless will take advantage of that. It'll be no good unless we work properly just as much as we are paid.」

「Y-yes. But—」

Yumeria hugged the sapling's case with care.

「No but! It's fine, just go and clean quickly. We'll have to prepare dinner after this too.」

Yumeria was dejected after Kyle left.

She looked at the sapling and smiled wryly.

「I got scolded. Perhaps—he hate me?」

Yumeria started walking, but she heard an argument when she headed to the place that she needed to clean.

She could hear Leon and Marie's voices.

Marie was scolding Leon.

『Enough sulking already! I've been thinking this since a long time ago, you need to do something about that troublesome personality of yours!』

Leon was also angry. His voice was rough.

『Who are you calling troublesome! You're the one with the terrible personality! Since a long time ago you're always always—』

『Now you said it, this shitty “big bro”!』

Yumeria's eyes turned round like saucer when she heard Marie yelling “big bro”.

She almost dropped the sapling.

Her mouth was opening and closing like fish.

(Eh? Eh!? Eh!! Marie-sama said big bro—she called Leon-sama big bro? Eh, but, the two are complete stranger—EeeeEeeeeee!!)

Yumeria didn't understand how Leon could be Marie's big bro. She was totally flustered.

(Wh, w-w-w-what do I do. Could this mean—Barkas-sama cheated and it resulted in Marie-sama!?)

If the two of them were siblings, then the possibility she thought up was that their parents were cheating.

Yumeria couldn't think of any other possibility.

(M-madam. I have to tell madam!)

Like this another misunderstanding was created.

.

## **Part 6**

Marie barged into my room and talked noisily since just now.

She called my personality troublesome. Had she seen the mirror when saying that?

It was Marie who was troublesome ever since our previous life.

「You yourself are also a troublesome woman!」

「I told you I'm still better than big bro! Besides, what's with you, sulking like this just because Noelle refused to be saved? Do big bro really think that girl was seriously saying that? Why didn't you bring her back forcefully huh!?」

「It can't be helped! —That's what Noelle decided.」

It wasn't a territory that outsiders like us could meddle with.

If that was what Noelle decided by herself, then there was nothing that I could do.

「Stupid big bro!」

「Just what's with you since some time ago!?」

「I called you stupid because you're stupid. You're also dense!」

「Haa!? Just how can I be dense huh!?」

What's with her, calling me stupid or dense?

Why was she pestering me to this degree?

Even when I looked at Luxion, he didn't show any sign of backing me up at all.

Just what had I done!?

Marie ran out of patience with me who wouldn't get it and spoke while looking down.

「The one who Noelle fell in love with is big bro.」

「Eh?」

Why would Noelle? Eh, me? Questions kept coming up in my head, but Marie ignored me and continued talking.

「That girl, she loved big bro. She always looked like she was having fun when she was with big bro. And yet, big bro wouldn't notice at all.」

「Th-that's—tell me if you realize that.」

Marie raised her voice when I said that with a faint voice.

「There's no way I can say it! Are you telling me to tell her, big bro already has two fiancées so just give up? Noelle, she looked like she was having a lot of fun—and yet, big bro was acting totally lovestruck when those two came here.」

Luxion approached me while I covered my face with my right hand.

『I didn't say anything because master looked like you didn't notice. The reason is, because I judged that master would act recklessly if you realized her feeling.』

「—That Noelle, did she stay behind at Barriere House because she was needlessly considerate for me?」

『I heard something like that from Creare.』

What the hell.

I should just bring her back at that time.

『Currently Noelle is under a strict security because of the previous infiltration. It'll be possible to take her back, but the damage to the enemy will be great.』

Marie asked me while I was in low spirits.

『Big bro—I want Noelle to be happy. That girl, she is a good girl.』

『I know that.』

I wonder why the main characters were all good girl like this.

If she was a bit more like normal girl who I could hate, I wouldn't need to worry so much like this.

Luxion added.

『Loic is suspecting us as the one who infiltrated. There are lookouts positioned around the mansion. Einhorn is also under monitoring at the harbor.』

『—I blundered. I should take her back forcefully.』

『That would be a problem too. They have grandly declared that the priestess has been found. Alzer will do everything they can to take her back in case we take her with us. Well, in short it will be an international problem that master hate.』

Loic was suspecting me.

That guy too was pointlessly capable.

But more importantly, it would be beyond my control if it became an international problem.

『I had just rampaged not long ago. I wonder if the kingdom will get angry with me if I do something this time.』

『The likes of Alzer can be destroyed anytime though?』

「You're always recommending destruction every time a problem happen huh.」

Luxion's solution was too extreme.

But, in case I saved Noelle, Alzer would surely doubt the kingdom first.

This was the worst.

I had no political sense.

Even if I sheltered her at the kingdom, what if Alzer demanded for her to be returned?

Should I bring her to escape to other country? No, in the first place, would Noelle accept this proposition?

And then, what kind of face I should make when meeting Noelle?

「This became even more complicated than before.」

I held my hand with both hands. Then Luxion said to me.

『Putting that aside—it seems that they have returned to the mansion. One of them is absent though.』

「Eh?」

When I lifted my face, Marie looked outside the window.

And then she yelled.

「What's that!? Hey, what's that!! Wait a second, what's the meaning of thissssss!!」

I also hesitantly looked outside the window. There an unexpected scene was unfolding.

## Part 7

When we opened the entrance's door, over there—.

「I'm sorry to have made you wait, Marie-san.」

Jilk who was wearing a high class suit had hired some people to bring several wooden boxes with him.

For some reason Jilk himself was holding a cracked vase in his arms.

「Marie, we finally realized. We realized what you wanted to say to us.」

Brad was wearing a white suit, a silk hat, a mantel—and a monocle glasses. He was walking with a cane in hand.

When he pointed the cane to Marie, cheap looking artificial flower popped out from the end of the cane.

The two's appearance was terrible, but it became even more terrible from here.

The one who appeared next was Greg wearing a speedo.

Behind him, men with trained body were following Greg while making the same pose like him.

「Marie, I have polished my manliness even further. And then I realized. Of what you wanted to say! Look, this is my feeling—FRONT DOUBLE BICEPPPPPPP!!」

Had Greg became slightly more muscular than before?

His body was glistening from the oil covering his body.

—And then, the sight beside him was even more horrible.

It was already impossible to comprehend.

It was Chris wearing a twisted headband and loincloth and chest wrap—and a *happi* coat. He was standing on a portable shrine that was carried by men.

「I have also polished my manliness. Marie, I understood what you wanted to say. We were wrong!」

The men shouted *wasshoi, wasshoi* while carrying the portable shrine—my first thought after seeing that was, so there was portable shrine in this world.

I didn't really want to think about Chris, or rather about all four of them.

To begin with, they were talking about understanding Marie's feeling but—I think they were absolutely getting it wrong.

Because, Marie was expressionless right now mon.

Or rather, her face was going pale.

Marie was rooted on the spot at the entrance. Kyle and Cara were worried seeing her like that.

Even Cordelia-san was expressionless.

As for Yumeria-san—she was watching with sparkling eyes. She asked 「Is there a festival starting?」 with innocent delight.

The four stepped in front of Marie.

Marie didn't move—no, she couldn't move so I asked in her place.

「What have you guys been doing?」

Jilk who was holding a vase talked about what he had been doing until now.

「After I was chased out from the mansion, I was earning money as an antique dealer. I have realized. Just what will be a good present for Marie-san.」

When I looked at Marie, she shook her head.

It seemed she didn't chase them out because she wanted present.

These guys, they couldn't understand even a millimeter of Marie's feeling even now.

Brad was also the same.

「We earned money with my own strength. There is only meaning in present when we used our own money for it. Isn't that right Marie?」

Well, I guess that was better than taking the living expenses as they pleased.

That was why I tried asking.

「By the way you guys, how much money you have earned?」

Greg made a pose while making his muscles twitching.

He was already muscular from the start, but it felt like he had become even more muscular in this one month.

「No idea! I used all of the money I earned in order to show my love to Marie! Look here Marie, at my SIDE CHESTTTTT!」 (TN: SIDE CHESTOOOOO)

Greg kept making poses that showed off his muscles.

Marie's expression didn't even twitch at all.

Chris got down from the portable shrine and took off his glasses.

It was like he was just acting cool, but with his appearance that looked as though a festival was going to start, something felt different.

「I used up all of the money that I earned to arrange this portable shrine and the helpers. But, I have no regret. This is my feeling toward Marie.」

It seemed that after they were chased out, they managed to earn money somehow.

I was curious about how the method they earned money, but leaving that aside—these guys didn't understand at the slightest.

What Marie wanted wasn't any present, but the money.

These guys were interpreting Marie's words willfully in their mind.

Even though they had finally earned money, it was pointless because they used up all of them.

Brad took off his silk hat, and then a rabbit popped out from there. When he saw that he said 「St-stupid, you're too early」 and pushed the rabbit back inside.

「Marie, I have prepared a lot more flowers than before. It should arrive here soon.」

Jilk turned his gaze toward the wooden boxes that the workers brought here.

「I have gathered the rare artworks. All of them are wonderful items.」

He got no persuasive power at all when he was holding a cracked vase like that.

This guy, did he really earn money as art dealer? It only looked like fake to me.

I sent my gaze to Marie.

「I didn't say. I didn't say anything about buying present.」

She kept muttering that with small voice.

The four of them offered their hand to Marie with sparkling eyes.

「Marie-san! Come, take my hand!」

「No, grab my hand!」

「Marie, look—the muscles only for you! MOST MUSCULARRRR!!」

「From today I will never allow Marie to toil in the bath. Come, take this hand Marie!」

The costumed four kneeled in front of Marie and offered their hands.

Marie didn't move.

She was looking at a faraway place.

She had the face of someone who never even dreamed that chasing out the four would bring this kind of result.

These guys, they were always blowing through everyone's expectation to far out of left field.

Cara was looking uneasy.

「I-I'm scared, imagining how Julius-san has ended up right now.」

Kyle was giving up.

「I won't be surprised even if he ended up even more horrible than these four.」

That's right, Julius.

Julius still hadn't returned.

It was that guy, so it wouldn't be strange even if he surpassed these four.

I couldn't even imagine what kind of thing that could surpass these four.

We were getting scared of Julius's return. It was then a man came.

He was wearing an apron with an appearance that was slightly dirty all over.

His white shirt was dirty. He was also breathing hard from sprinting all the way to here.

His hand was grabbing a brown envelope.

Marie noticed.

「Julius!」

Eh!?

I thought that Julius would make an even louder stupid commotion than these guys, so I never thought that a plain guy like this would be Julius.

Julius was smiling.

「Marie, I'm home.」

# **Chapter 9 – Former Crown Prince**

## **Part 1**

「I'm home.」

When Julius came back to the mansion after a total of one month, he was relieved from the bottom of his heart to see Marie again after so long.

At the same time, he saw the four who had prepared very lavish presents.

(I am—really pathetic.)

He realized just how useless he was after seeing the presents that the four prepared for Marie's sake.

He was unable to earn a lot of money.

Marie approached him.

「Julius, why are you in such getup?」

Marie was worried for him.

He was happy just from that.

「—I was working in a stand.」

「A stand?」

Other than Marie there was also Kyle and Cara.

For some reason, Yumeria and—Cordelia who was working at Ange's place were also here.

But, Julius paid them no attention and talked to Marie.

「Actually I planned to come here the first thing in the morning, but the boss had to replenish the stock at the morning so I was helping him.」

The boss had picked him up, that was why Julius worked seriously.

But, it was just a part-time job in a food stand.

He couldn't earn a lot of money there.

「It was a stand of meat skewer.」

「Julius was working part-time in a stand?」

Marie was surprised.

(Did I fail?)

But, this was his current self.

Also, Julius believed that his experience working in the stand wasn't pointless.

He really had fun.

It was also painful.

He did his best working hard, but the money he earned was few. He learned how the society worked.

He listened to the complaints of the drunk customers, the boss scolded him because of his ignorance of the world—Julius learned just how wrong he was.

「Actually I wanted to buy a present but, I thought that perhaps this might actually be the best present.」

Julius held out his salary that he earned from this one month.

Marie accepted it.

It was an amount that couldn't be said as a lot.

「Marie, this is the best that I can do. And then I have understood. I was—an idiot. I knew that money is something that has to be earned, but I didn't comprehend it. There was this feeling inside me that money is surely just welling up from somewhere. I was able to understand that for the first time after trying to earn money by myself.」

「Julius.」

Marie hugged the brown envelope.

「I have no present to give you but, this is all the money that I can earn with everything I have. I want you to accept it.」

But, there were four people who were disappointed by this act of Julius.

「Your highness—I thought that you are a more capable person than this. It's disappointing.」

Jilk who had high evaluation of Julius was looking really disappointed.

「I was secretly considering your highness as the most dangerous rival. This is a complete let-down.」

*Is my rival only this much?* Brad's slightly frustrated look expressed that.

「I don't wanna see Julius looking like this.」

Greg expressed his sadness with his posing. He must have wished for the five of them to fight seriously. It seemed he didn't want to see Julius being the only one dropping out.

「This is just a battle between four people like this.」

Chris was also vexed.

He seemed to think that Julius wasn't worth to be taken seriously.

Julius himself also understood that.

「I don't have any word that I can say. This battle is my loss. But, I have given it everything I have in my own way. If this is the result than I can only accept it.」

It was frustrating, but Julius accepted that this was his current self.

It was frustrating that he couldn't be Marie's number one.

However, Julius who was unable to understand of his own worthlessness thought that it couldn't be helped even if Marie chose someone else other than him.

Leon and others were watching him in astonishment.

Marie slowly approached Julius. She grabbed his right wrist and lifted it up.

「Julius, you are the number one!」

「—Eh?」

Jilk and others were dumbfounded because Julius who earned the least among them was called the number one.

「P-please wait, Marie-san! Isn't this a match to choose the one who earn the most money?」

Marie fanned herself with the brown envelope while speaking to the four who didn't understand anything.

「Oh? When did I say that I would choose the person who earned the most money? Setting that aside, even though I told you guys to go earn money, what kind of brain do you have there to waste money buying pointless things and ending up penniless huh! The amount of money that you four have earned is zero! That's why your score is also zero.」

Brad's shoulders slumped down.

A pigeon's head peeked out from his pocket.

「How can this beeeee!!」

Greg fell on his knees.

「So we were mistaken?」

The men behind Greg consoled him. 「Greg-san, be strong!」 「Your muscle is the best!」 「Your pose is really striking!」 They said.

Chris apologized to Julius.

「So it's his highness who snatched Marie's heart. It's our defeat.」

The four looked at Julius. They lost, but their faces were refreshed.

Julius looked at the four.

「Y-you guys—thank you」

The four consoled the crying Julius. At the side Marie was dancing with the brown enveloped raised high while chanting 「Salary! Salary!」 .

Leon spoke last.

「What the hell is this?」

## **Part 2**

The five idiots had returned.

That was nice and all, but the timing was iffy.

They weren't present when Noelle was kidnapped, and now they were useless at this stage when they were going to take her back.

Just what was the meaning of these guys' existence? I was seriously thinking that.

But, I also couldn't possibly leave them in the dark.

After all, these were the bunch of idiots who returned as antique dealer, magician, bodybuilder, and festival guy after getting chased out and told to earn money.

The stand waiter Julius looked the most decent among them.

Julius was sitting on a chair and folding his arms while still wearing apron.

I had explained what had happened until now but—

「I understand the gist of it. In other words, Bartfalt, you want to save Noelle right?」

「Yeah I guess.」

I didn't expect any appropriate answer from these guys, but I guess I should ask for their opinion just in case.

If they said something stupid and tried to carry it out, they would have to be stopped.

I was thinking that.

「Then you can just save her.」

「Ha? You, did you listen to the story? Noelle is the priestess, that's why Alzer desperately came to take her back. Even if I take her back to the kingdom and shelter her there, those guys are going to doubt us.」

As I thought these guys were hopeless.

Jilk tilted his head just while I was thinking that.

「Why is that no good?」

「N-no, that's why, it'll become international problem.」

Brad who was shuffling trump cards laughed when he heard the problem that I was worrying about.

「Of course it will. But, is that really that important?」

「Problem children like you guys won't understand but, it'll be a really big problem.」

Greg who wasn't wearing any clothes except a single speedo pointed out at me.

Wear some clothes first you.

「This sacred tree's sapling, it'll be able to do the same thing like the sacred tree in the future right? Then, isn't it only natural to take possession of it even if it will bring some problems with it? Even the palace will cover for you if it can solve the energy problem in the future.」

—Eh? This speedoman, is he unexpectedly bright?

Kyle offered some clothes to Chris, but he firmly refused 「This is my uniform」 and stayed in his current appearance of loincloth and happi coat.

「I can't claim to be superior to the other four in politic, but after hearing the story just now I still don't understand just what is it that is so worrying from it.」

He was looking at me with a puzzled expression.

「T-that's why」

Even I was bewildered with these five denying my worry.

Julius spoke boldly.

「Bartfalt is concerned about the problem that will occur with the commonwealth, but I think the merit will outweigh such thing. That sacred tree's sapling and the priestess being one set will also be more convenient for the kingdom right? In that case you can boldly steal her away with such just cause behind you.」

「You guys are really radical.」

「Not as much as Bartfalt though. In the first place. If you know about Noelle's background, why didn't you immediately evacuate her? The kingdom had a friendly relation with Lespinasse House. They will accept and shelter her even without counting the matter of the sapling.」

There's the circumstance of that otome game! —I couldn't say that though.

「No, but, to kidnap her in this situation is a bit—the international problem it will cause is scary.」

「Enough already!」

While I was hesitating, Marie who was tightly grasping the brown envelope kicked my butt.

「Ouch! What the hell are you doing woman!」

「It's irritating watching you. If you want to save her then just go save her! It'll be troublesome if you keep worrying timidly forever and leave this alone until you miss the timing.」

I'm not being timid!

「There are many things that need to be considered like the responsibility for example!」

「You're going to save her anyway right? If you're just going to snap and rampage later, then it's better to save her from the start. Aa~, you're really irritating!」

Yumeria-san was panicking seeing me arguing with Marie.

And then, Cordelia-san sent a cold gaze toward me.

The five idiots formed a circle and talked in whispers.

「What do you think?」

「The worst I think.」

「How should I say it—horrible.」

「I also of the same opinion.」

「Is Bartfalt really not noticing?」

Julius and others were whispering between themselves, so I pointed at their way.

「You guys! Say it clearly if you got something to say!」

Then the five looked at each other and Julius stepped in front of me as their representative.

「Then let me say it Bartfalt—you didn't notice Noelle's feeling? Really?」

I lost my vigor from just now.

「Y-yeah.」

It was the fact that I didn't notice until I was told. I couldn't say anything back.

「I see. Well, that's alright. Perhaps this problem could be avoided beforehand if you noticed, but that's alright.」

This guy was really persistent.

He dare said that the problem wouldn't become this big if only I noticed.

「By the way Bartfalt, do you remember when you dueled us the first time?」

「Obviously. It felt really refreshing that time.」

The five showed irritated expressions when I said that honestly.

I was a honest person, so I would answer honestly if I was asked a question.

「I see. Do you remember your words at that time? If my memory serves me right, it was about even though we have beautiful fiancées, we're allowed to play around and so on wasn't it? You were criticizing me for cheating.」

I also said something like that huh.

「What about it?」

「I'm just thinking that those words can be applied perfectly on you right now.」

「I'm not cheating like you guys.」

「It looks the same from outside though. —But, I think you will be forgiven if it's Angelica.」

「Ha?」

「I'm saying that if you say that you want to put Noelle beside you, Angelica will allow it. Angelica too is a noble's daughter. What's more she is a queen candidate who received a proper education. She will agree with securing Noelle if she that the national interest into consideration.」

「No way I can do that! You guys, are you telling me to cheat!?」

Jilk scoffed at my words.

「—You don't have any persuasiveness even if you say that seeing that you already have two fiancées.」

What to do—I couldn't say anything back.

Julius concluded the talk.

「Well, putting aside your personal feeling, the kingdom won't oppose it if you save Noelle. Besides, you were given a position by mother so that you can move freely in the commonwealth right?」

Well, it was true that when I temporarily returned back home I was entrusted with the responsibility to take action in case anything happened here.

「I think I was given that kind of position.」

「Yosh, then there's no problem. Go save Noelle.」

「—Eh?」

Chris who wasn't joining the talk until now gave me an advice.

「Don't worry. The commonwealth has been shutting themselves inside their own country for these last dozens of years. If the story about the sacred tree is true, those guys cannot invade other country. In the first place, it looks like all of their military are only for defense.」

The weapons of the commonwealth that was moving using the sacred tree's energy was formidable in defensive aspect.

But, their weapons were weaker than the kingdom's weapons when they came out of their territory.

「They're going to complain a lot, but they won't be able to actually do anything.」

I thought for a bit—and raised a problem.

「There is a possibility of Alzer applying a diplomatic pressure right?」

Brad answered that question.

「There is. But, you are forgetting one thing.」

「What is it?」

「If your story is true, this is a power struggle within Alzedr. Barriere House is only moving to obtain the authority. In that case, there is a house that is in trouble right now isn't it?」

「You mean Rault House?」

「Correct. We can just join hand with Rault House in order to oppose Barriere House.」

Marie's shoulders jumped when she heard that.

「S-say~, about that. Rault House's reputation is bad isn't it? I wonder if it'll be alright for us to join hand with that kind of side without asking for permission first~」

Well, they were the last boss of that otome game's sequel.

So to speak they were the villain in the game.

Greg argued against Marie's opinion.

「You don't get it huh, Marie. —That's only from Alzer's perspective, right? From the kingdom's perspective, it'll be more convenient to have Rault House in control of Alzer. If we tell them that we're going to take Noelle away in their situation, it feels like they will happily send us off!」

Certainly—from the perspective of Rault House that was thinking of Noelle's existence as a thorn to their side, it wouldn't hurt them at all even if the kingdom took her away.

Instead if that happened then Barriere House would be hindered from gaining prominence.

Jilk smiled while thinking of something bad.

「The kingdom will also be thankful if we can form a connection with Rault House that is the acting chairman.」

Julius put his hand on his waist and looked at me.

「Now then, Bartfalt—the problems are all cleared.」

「They ain't cleared at all. We can't obtain Rault House's cooperation.」

「For that if you just—」

These guys, they were more capable than I thought.

Come to think of it, they were noble youths who had received proper upbringing.

I had forgotten it because they were usually too stupid, but they were honor students with excellent grades.

—You guys, don't be serious only at this kind of time!

Cordelia-san had disappeared from the room without me noticing while I was having discussion with Julius and others.

And then she appeared once more.

「Leon-sama, there is a guest. He introduced himself as a messenger of Louise-sama from Rault House.」

「From Louise-san?」

Julius looked at me.

「Bartfalt, this is a chance! Get their cooperation no matter what.」

「Are you screwing with me?」

「No, I'm serious though?」

Don't make it sound so easy!

.

## **Part 3**

I entered the party venue of the six great nobles together with Marie.

I was wearing suit while Marie was wearing dress.

Normally I wouldn't be invited here, but Louise-san prepared an invitation letter for me.

She designated this party venue as the place for us to meet.

It seemed she was unable to easily leave Druille House's mansion. In addition I heard that she always had someone watching her.

She called us to this party venue to be able to meet us because Druille House's movement was suspicious.

Marie's eyes were stolen by the extravagant cooking.

「Aa~, that whole roast pig look delicious. I want to try eating it by myself.」

I was exasperated by Marie who said such thing.

「I'll feed you that later so wait for now. We need to meet with Louise-san first.」

When we entered the party venue, the nobles of Alzer who knew about me were surprised.

They whispered to each other.

「Is that man the kingdom's knight?」

「I heard that his nickname is Fiendish Knight. A merchant from the kingdom told me.」

「Oh my, how scary.」

I was looking for Louise-san while my heart was getting injured by the gossiping of the noble wives.

Marie pulled at my sleeve and talked to me in a small voice.

「Big bro, it's Loic.」

It was Barriere House that was managing the party venue.

Perhaps the receptionist had reported my arrival. Loic arrived together with the head of Barriere House.

His name was—Bellange I think.

「Look who we have here, welcome to this party, sir hero of the kingdom.」

The man spread his arms to make a show to the surrounding. He had a large build and intimidating air.

Loic was smiling fearlessly beside him.

「I don't remember inviting you, but please have fun here for today. After all there will be an important announcement for Alzer after this in this place.」

He offered me his hand so I shook it. The other side strongly grasped my hand.

I also grasped back.

「I know. Something about marriage right? Congratulations.」

Loic's expression didn't change.

「Sir hero have sharp ears. Well, even if it's just a compliment but I shall take it.」

We both released each other's hand.

Bellange talked to me.

「By the way I have one request to you sir hero. About the sacred tree's sapling, it's something very important for Alzer. No, it's something sacred. Can you perhaps concede it to us? Of course we will prepare befitting reward to show our gratitude.」

I smiled at Bellange who behaved modestly with me.

The surrounding was also focusing at us when the topic of sapling-chan came up.

Thanks to that the surrounding became quiet immediately.

It showed really clearly how important this topic was for the commonwealth.

「I like it a lot so I refuse. If you want it then you can take it away from me by force. —That's if you can.」

Bellange laughed.

「How harsh! But we won't give up so easily. Let's continue the negotiation again in the future.」

The surrounding looked at us with hostility.

「A knight of the barbaric kingdom dare to...」

「Don't act big after winning against just Faiviel House.」

「He is getting cocky because he's still green.」

They were saying whatever they wanted.

Bellange and Loic left me because it seemed the time had come.

Loic gave his parting words while leaving.

「Then excuse us. Please have fun. Ah, also—you better give up if you're planning to take Noelle back. She is mine.」

He was keeping up appearances so nobody else could see, but he was directing a dark killing intent toward me.

His expression made me want to ask him whether he was trying to make funny faces.

Seeing that, Marie said 「This guy」 and glared at Loic, but I responded to him with a refreshing smile.

「There was something similar like this before. An idiot prince picked a fight with me.」

「Hou—and then?」

「Do you want to know what that guy is doing right now? Right now he is grilling meat in a food stand. The former crown prince is earning money in a meat skewer stand. It's really a touching tale isn't it?」

I wasn't lying.

It was true.

That Julius, he would head to that stand if he had free time and worked there.

The person himself was really happy though, it was like 「I have found my calling!」 .

Well, something like this was just a threat.

It didn't have any effect to Loic.

「I'm looking forward to that. Are you going to destroy Alzer just like how you burned Faiviel House? Certainly you're strong, but don't think that you can survive with just that.」

Loic took away his gaze from us. Over there was the diplomats from other countries.

The diplomat of Holy Kingdom Rachelle was looking at me.

「Do you get it? The world isn't that easy. You're strong, but don't think that everything will go as you want it with just that.」

「I never thought of anything like that. But, remember this. I'll crush those who oppose me. You're also the same. Just keep worrying forever hoping so that Noelle won't be taken away from you.」

Loic glared at me before he erased his expression and put on his best face.

「I'll look forward to it, sir hero of the kingdom. No, the fiendish knight was it?」

That unpleasant nickname was spreading until this place.

Marie looked disgusted at the leaving Loic.

「He is really an epitome of DV bastard. He is acting so that the people around him won't notice. But more importantly big bro—can you really take Noelle back?」

Not only this party venue, the security around Noelle also couldn't be compared from before.

It would be difficult even for Luxion to accomplish that without killing the enemy.

In the first place, that guy wouldn't mind even if there was casualty from the enemies.

He was a guy who couldn't solve things peacefully.

「I'm still thinking of how to do it. Taking Noelle back itself is easy but—」

「Leon-kun, long time no see.」

Albergue-san found me while I was thinking and came to my spot.

「Albergue-san.」

His expression looked tired somewhere in it.

「Why are you here today? I can't imagine that Bellange would invite you.」

He didn't know about Louise-san?

「No, actually—」

When I was going to speak about the circumstance, the venue's lighting was erased and lamps were turned on at the stage.

Thre Loic appeared—with Noelle.

Noelle was wearing a dress, but it exposed very little skin. Her collar was also decorated.

And then Loic held Noelle's hand and lifted her right hand.

「More than ten years has passed since Lespinasse House was destroyed. The position of priestess has been empty since then, but that's only until today. The priestess's crest is residing in this Noelle Zel Lespinasse's right hand! She is a survivor of Lespinasse House that is thought to be destroyed.」

Applauses were raised because the people inside this venue had known about this beforehand.

Albergue-san's expression was turning grim inside the dark venue.

Was he unable to forget his anger toward Lespinasse House just as we thought?

Noelle stood beside Loic and waved her hand with a smile.

Marie explained to me.

「Big bro, it's really bad. I'm just guessing but, there are a lot of bruises under her clothes. Her expression is also stiff, and her complexion is also bad even though they're using makeup to cover it up.」

「You understand that much?」

「It's just my instinct.」

Could this girl's instinct be relied on?

I was doubting her, but then a report came from Luxion who was camouflaging himself.

『Marie's instinct is right on the money. The wound on her face is covered up with makeup but, there is also trace of beating on her body.』

Then why was she waving her hand with a smile?

It was Marie who answered my question.

「She is convincing herself that everything will be fine if she just endure. Besides, her ability to think will get whittled down gradually with how cornered she is. She will lose even her will to escape. Other

people will think that a victim can just escape from this kind of situation if they really hate it. But, it's impossible.]

Was that her experience talking?

This was infuriating.

Loic made a declaration.

「Now then, with the coming back of the priestess, surely everyone is having expectation of what lies ahead from that. As everyone know, the guardian is also nonexistent right now. But, this too will be solved soon enough. I—Loic Leta Barriere will marry Noelle and assume that position!」

The surrounding clapped and cheered loudly.

They must have made preparation beforehand.

My hand was grabbed within the darkness while I was watching that.

Louise-san was there when I turned around.

「I found you. Come over here.」

Albergue-san was also surprised.

「Louise, you're the one who called him here?」

「I'll explain later. But right now it's Noelle.」

We slipped out from the dark party venue and entered a room that Louise-san had prepared.

.

## **Part 4**

Inside the dark venue.

There was one more person who noticed Leon and Marie's appearance.

It was Lelia who was participating in the party with Emile.

(Those guys, they're going to do as they please again!?)

Lelia was losing her calm seeing them leaving the venue with Albergue and Louise. She spoke to Emile.

「Emile, I'm going to fix my makeup.」

「Eh? But, just now you have—」

「Emile, don't ask too much.」

Emile gasped when she told him that. He averted his gaze.

「R-right. Sorry, yeah, take your time there.」

It seemed he was thinking that she would go to toilet.

It offended her as a woman, but right now her priority was to learn about Leon and Marie's action.

(Those guys, moving around as they please!)

Lelia followed after Leon and others.

.

## **Part 5**

We listened to Louise-san's story. The first one who became enraged was Albergue-san.

「You've done it huh, Fernand.」

His anger was seeping out quietly.

Louise-san was looking slightly uneasy.

「I took advantage when the venue turned dark just now and somehow slipped away. It was almost like imprisonment for me in the mansion. There would be watcher even when I went out, while at the mansion I had almost no freedom. It looks like even my letter is checked.」

Why was Louise-san locked up?

That was because Druille House was betraying Rault House.

Albergue-san stood up.

「—Louise, you stay here. I'm going to talk with Fernand.」

「Otou-sama?」

「I'm going to take you home to our mansion today. Use my name if the people of Druille House come.」

Albergue-san went out of the room.

Then Marie let out a sigh after she was liberated from the tension.

「Aa~, that was scary. His pressure wasn't a joke.」

Louise-san chuckled seeing Marie like that.

「He is usually gentle you know?」

「It doesn't look like that at all.」

I was listening to the report from Luxion that kept coming.

The surrounding couldn't hear it.

『Master, it seems Druille House is planning to use Louise to make Hughes into Rault House's head.』

I kept hearing nothing but unpleasant story.

I wished there would be more cheerful story that came to me.

But, there were things that wouldn't come true even if you wished for them.

『—There is one person eavesdropping in front of the door. It's Lelia. Should I remove her?』

Why were always you that radical?

「I'll let her in.」

Both Marie and Louise-san looked at me because I suddenly opened my mouth.

I stealthily approached the door and pulled it wide open. There Lelia was crouching with her ear pressed on the door just now.

「That's improper you know, priestess's little sister-san.」

When I laughed at her, Lelia glared at Louise-san inside the room.

She talked to me with a small voice.

「What are you planning huh? Don't tell me, you're going to be Rault House's ally!?」

「I'm considering it positively.」

「Don't dodge the question!」

Hearing the ruckus, Louise-san looked at Lelia and folded her arms.

「—Lelia, so you're also involved. Well, it's fine. I also wanted to talk with you. There isn't any need to hide it anymore anyway.」

Louise-san permitted it, so I let Lelia entered inside and closed the door.

Lelia was nervous, but she was baring her hostility in front of Louise-san.

「—It will be over for Rault House with this.」

「That might be so.」

Louise-san didn't look shaken at all.

Marie talked to me with a small voice.

「Hey, what is going to begin right now?」

「Do you think I know? That depends on these two.」

Lelia looked like she was already convinced of her victory. She was acting confident toward Louise-san.

However, she was flustered in front of Louise-san who showed no agitation.

「A-after this, you won't be able to do as you please. You had been bullying big sis a lot, but you won't be able to do that anymore.」

「Seems so. I won't need to do that anymore even if we return back to the academy.」

She wouldn't need to?

I and Marie looked at each other.

Marie asked Louise-san hesitantly.

「S-say~, didn't you quarrel with Noelle because you hate her, or something?」

Louise-san laughed.

She laughed, and then she talked with a really nice smile.

「It's true I hate that woman. I really hate her. It's the same with Lelia over there too. They are living carefree without knowing anything, in addition they even slipped into the academy too. They even kept their name as it is. I was wondering whether they are thinking that we are so stupid.」

Lelia objected.

「T-that's! —It was because our retainers wrote the name like that in the application form.」

Well, so it wasn't because of their own wish.

「When I found the two of them in the academy, I really hated them I couldn't bear it. Even I don't know everything. But, I know that Otou-sama let the twins who are the heiress of Lespinasse House to get away.」

He let the twins got away?

I and Marie looked at each other in puzzlement.

Marie shook her head side to side. She was insisting that she didn't know what Louise-san was talking about.

This girl is useless.

Marie couldn't ask Louise-san, so I asked in her place.

「I understand that you hate the two of them but, why then you only picked a quarrel with Noelle?」

Louise-san looked at me with a very sad gaze.

She clenched her hands.

「Otou-sama asked me to. He said it's because the twins aren't at fault. Lelia has Emile at her side. But, there wasn't anyone at Noelle's side. Pierre was also still there until just a little while ago, and the troublesome Loic was also following her around.」

Lelia was bewildered.

「What does that have to do with you picking a quarrel with big sis?」

It seemed Marie had noticed.

「Ah, could it be that was you claiming, this is my prey so hands off, is it that kind of thing?」

Louise-san nodded weakly.

「Even I don't want to get involved with them. I hated you two who were living peacefully without knowing anything. Even though you don't even know our feeling, just what's with you two!?!」

Louise-san was gradually getting high-strung. She approached Lelia and cornered her to the wall.

She grabbed her collar, so I and Marie separated them.

I said to Marie.

「Take her outside! I'll take care of this one here!」

「O-okay. Come on, let's get out!」

After the two of them got out of the room, only I and Louise-san remained inside.

Luxion made a teasing remark.

『Now master is alone with another woman. Let's be careful so that master won't be suspected of cheating.』

—Shut up, this piece of junk AI.

# **Chapter 10 – Villain**

.

## **Part 1**

Marie went outside to the corridor with Lelia.

The two of them were breathing hard.

Lelia seemed to be losing her composure from the shock that Louise was genuinely hating her.

She pressed her chest and complained about what just happened.

「What's with that woman. Even though she is the villainess—even though she is the culprit that tormented us until now, she dared acting like the victim.」

Marie asked Lelia.

「Let's leave her to big bro. More importantly, about Loic. He was really a bad news. Have you checked on Noelle properly?」

Lelia answered in agitation.

「I did! I also met big sis directly! Big sis herself said that she is fine, and Loic said the collar is for her safety!」

Marie looked at Lelia's behavior and judged that she was useless.

(This girl, she was completely cajoled with words.)

Lelia couldn't see through Loic's true nature.

Loic too was acting as someone harmless in front of Lelia.

(So Loic can easily deceive the like of Lelia when he gets serious. Hm? Wait—collar? I think there was an event when Loic brought a collar—ah!!)

Marie told Lelia that the situation right now was really bad.

「Collar. That's right, it's the bad end collar! It's dangerous if Loic brings out the collar. You also know right? We can't just leave things like this so work with us.」

Lelia glared at Marie who was saying that.

「Even Loic won't collar big sis if you guys didn't do anything unnecessary. He didn't have any other choice but to put the collar on big sis to protect her from you guys.」

「Haa!? The collar is already on her when big bro went to save her. —Wait. You, you had played the second game properly right? You had seen Loic's bad end right!?」

Marie got a bad premonition here.

Perhaps Lelia's knowledge of the second game was actually half-baked, just like herself? She got that kind of feeling.

And that feeling was right on the mark.

「I didn't watch any of the bad end! The game guide said that two-timing is dangerous, so I avoided from doing that in the game.」

In that otome game's sequel, bad end would be waiting if the player were carelessly two-timing.

Loic would bring out the collar if he saw a dangerous sign in his relationship with Noelle.

「I-idiot! If the collar that Loic brought out is a special item, then that'll be a straight line to the bad end!」

「—Heh?」

Lelia looked like she really didn't know anything.

「You said that you watched the true end right!?」

The true end that could be said as the real ending. Lelia said that she had watched it.

Lelia averted her gaze from Marie.

「I, I progressed through the game following the game guide, so I didn't see the bad ends.」

Marie held her head in frustration.

「Stuppiddd!! At this rate things will go straight to bad end!」

「B-because. I don't want to see something like bad end! Besides, it looked like things were going fine!」

「Forget about it, you work together with us. Crap. Crap, crap. I need to tell big bro! At this rate, Noelle will—」

Lelia became uneasy seeing how panicked Marie was.

「I-is it really that bad?」

「At this rate Loic is going to confine Noelle! If things go like in the game, there won't be any love between the two. That's why the guardian won't be born and Alzer will get destroyed.」

「That'll be troubling!」

Marie was irritated by Lelia's reaction.

(This girl, she isn't worrying about Noelle!)

「Anyway! —Work together with us. Loic right now is dangerous.」

Lelia casted her eyes downward.

.

## **Part 2**

I was sitting on the sofa inside the room with Louise-san.

I was hugging her from behind.

She was struggling and crying just now but—she was calming down right now.

Louise-san talked about the past piece by piece.



「—You see, there was a talk of engagement between my little brother Leon and Noelle. What's more it was Lespinasse House that suggested it.」

「So there was something like that.」

「It was a stupid story. Originally Oto-sama should be the one chosen as the guardian. And yet they acted like they hadn't done anything wrong and said that they need Rault House's strength.」

It seemed something happened in the past. Luxion summarized the story so it was easier for me to understand.

『The priestess who broke her engagement with Albergue in the past shamelessly brought up an engagement talk between her daughter and Albergue's son. Well, it might be the result of an effort for each sides to let the bygones be bygones at the next generation.』

If Leon-kun of Rault House got married with Noelle and became the guardian, then it would also be beneficial for Rault House.

But Louise-san looked like she couldn't accept it.

「And yet, when Leon died the previous priestess and guardian didn't even show up at his burial. They sent a representative and that was all.」

That was certainly a rude attitude.

Perhaps there was a circumstance in Alzer at that time?

「Is it normal to send representative for that kind of thing?」

「—It sometimes happened if there was a reason, even then Leon was a legitimate son of Rault House. The other houses sent their heir at minimum to participate in the burial. And yet they」

From what I heard, Lespinasse House was also—really horrible weren't they?

Their attitude toward Rault House was too poor.

They were at the side of justice in the second game right? Then why did they act like that?

「—I hated those two who didn't know anything. I hate them, really hate them—but, when the engagement was decided, Leon looked happy when she saw the girl's photo. Onee-chan, my wife is a beauty see—he was really excited like that. Otou-sama was also smiling wryly.」

W-wasn't that too carefree? Leon-kun, shouldn't you read the atmosphere a bit more?

But, he was five years old. Well, perhaps it couldn't be helped that he didn't know the circumstance?

「He wanted to meet with Noelle. He even said precocious things like, I'll make her happy. —If only he didn't say something like that, then even I...」

Did Louise-san protect Noelle because Leon-kun took a liking to Noelle?

This person was also a busybody huh.

「Even so, you were actually protecting Noelle. Because other people won't be able to do anything to her while you are picking a quarrel with her.」

So this person was protecting Noelle from troublesome guys like Pierre.

The situation was too complicated that I was at a loss.

It would be better if the bad guy was more malicious.

If not—it would make me feel bad when making the decision.

「—It was because Otou-sama was also asking me. He said that those two are innocent. I told Otou-sama that it would be dangerous if those two become priestess. But, Otou-sama said that won't happen.」

—He thought that they wouldn't become priestess?

What does that mean?

There I recalled the thing that Luxion mentioned.

Why did Lespinasse House lose against Rault House that was lower ranked?

「But, now that this happens there is nothing that we can do. If Noelle is chosen as the priestess, then even Otou-sama won't be able to do anything to oppose it.」

「That is, even if she is the priestess of the sapling?」

「There is also the possibility of that huh. But, what's important is the existence of priestess. That's just how important the priestess is in our country. No one will mind even if she's the priestess of the sapling instead of the current sacred tree.」

「Aa~, as I thought.」

I was able to confirm that this didn't change Noelle's value at all.

Like this, it would be difficult to save her.

Louise-san grabbed my hand.

「Hey—do you want to save Noelle?」

.

## **Part 3**

In a waiting room of the party venue.

Noelle was pushed into there after she finished meeting the members of the six great nobles—the heads of the houses.

Noelle was sitting in front of a mirror with Loic hugging her from behind.

Noelle was getting goosebumps, but she endured it and showed no reaction.

She would only get hit if she showed her dislike.

「Noelle, Leon came to the party you know?」

「Tsu!」

Loic's expression vanished when Noelle reacted to that.

He grabbed Noelle's side ponytail violently and forcefully made her faced him.

「Do you like that man that much? You who are the priestess are choosing a foreigner!?」

Loic violently threw Noelle who was sitting. His breathing was rough.

But he immediately ran to Noelle and hugged her.

「I'm sorry Noelle. I don't want to hurt you. But, it's your fault because you're thinking of other man.」

Loic was always acting like this after he inflicted violence to Noelle. His mind was unstable.

He would suddenly be kind.

It became painful for Noelle to think when she was in this kind of situation for days.

Besides,

(I won't be able to run anyway.)

The collar wouldn't allow Noelle to get away from Loic.

If she was unable to escape, she had no choice other than to obey.

If she recklessly tried to escape, she would only suffer.

「Noelle, our marriage ceremony will come soon. After that no one will be able to get in the way of our bond anymore. I'll protect you if I'm chosen as the guardian.」

Noelle didn't say anything to Loic.

Loic was irritated by that attitude and pressed down Noelle's head.

He pressed her head on the floor and grinded her head down.

「Noelle, why won't you understand my love!? You are always, always!」

Noelle was waiting for Loic's violence to end.

(I want to go home. Someone save me. —Leon)

She wanted to escape, but she couldn't.

Noelle was enduring the hopeless situation alone.

.

## **Part 4**

An expressionless Cordelia-san welcomed me when I returned to Marie's mansion.

「Welcome back Leon-sama. —Did you have fun going to a party together with Marie-sama?」

「It was fun. I was able to get over a lot of things there.」

「—That's good to hear.」

Her gaze became even colder than before.

Yumeria-san was also beside her. She took the jacket that I took off.

「It must be hard for nobles with so many parties to attend like this.」

Unlike Cordelia-san, this maid was warm and healing me.

Marie was making a tired face.

「Geez, it feels like my head will burst. There is nothing but trouble. I couldn't even eat the food.」

After that we had a talk about what we were going to do.

It was a great outcome that we managed to obtain the cooperation of Albergue-san and Louise-san.

Julius showed up when we returned home.

「So you two have returned. And, what's the situation now?」

I explained simply.

「It's really a power struggle. I got the impression that Barriere House wants to oust down Rault House and drag the surrounding with them to do it.」

They were fully motivated to make use of the existence of the priestess that couldn't be ignored by anyone to rise higher in status.

Loic himself was fixated with Noelle, but his head of the house Bellange was aiming for the seat of acting chairman.

No, should I say that he wanted the position to control the commonwealth?

Julius nodded.

「So it's just as we thought. Everyone has already gathered.」

We entered the room where the five idiots and—Kyle and Cara were waiting.

It was just the dining room though.

Everyone looked nervous when I and Marie came.

After Marie sat on her chair, Cara prepared water for her.

Kyle was the one who brought me water, so I took the glass and drank it all in one gulp before wiping my mouth.

「It's vexing but the situation is just as you guys thought. Setting aside Loic, the commonwealth's bunches are starting a power struggle by making use of Noelle.」

Jilk didn't look particularly surprised.

「That's how it is. I gathered information at the embassy. I found out that right now Barriere House is using various ways in order to obtain the sapling.」

Brad looked slightly troubled.

「There will be officials who turn traitor if they are offered a lot of money, and it will be troublesome if officials at the level of cabinet minister got bribed. It will be better to settle this before that happens.」

Greg was—why aren't you wearing any shirt? Wear clothes you idiot, clothes!

「A country's benefit and a personal benefit aren't the same thing after all. Even if we secure Noelle quickly, Alzer is a rich country. It'll be troublesome if they use a lot of funds to use underhanded tricks.」

Next was Chris but—why wasn't this guy wearing pants?

「We need to decide the battle decisively in a short time. After we save her let's ask her majesty the queen to shelter Noelle. That person will prioritize the country's interest rather than her own personal interest.」

Roland's name didn't come out here. It was clear that our country's central pillar wasn't him but Mylene-san.

Marie lie down on the table.

「In the end it will still be problematic even after we rescue her. Aa~, there are too many troubles. Isn't there any way to easily resolve this?」

I also felt the same.

That was why, I would settle this problem neatly.

Julius looked at me.

「Bartfalt, what are you going to do? If it's possible to rescue her, we can just leave the rest to mother at the kingdom. Just as Chris said, mother will prioritize the country's interest. She will surely protect Noelle.」

That wasn't bad, but it also wasn't good.

I was a coward, so I wanted to remove as many seeds of future problem as possible.

Besides, there was also Rachelle's diplomat in this country.

It was a country that was in dispute with Mylene-san's home country.

If the commonwealth got serious, they would surely support Holy Kingdom Rachelle.

They would also support the countries that were in dispute with the kingdom to harass us.

We also didn't know how long it would take until the sapling could display the same power like the sacred tree.

Would Mylene-san help Noelle even if she had to turn everyone around her into enemy?

As a coward I couldn't accept a method that would leave so much anxiety.

「No good. If Alzer get serious, even Mylene-san might not be able to completely protect Noelle. It will be really troublesome if they come to us with underhanded tricks. That's why—I'll break the pride of this country.」

Julius made a troubled face when I said that I would break their pride.

But, he didn't reject my opinion.

「Do you have some kind of ingenious idea? It's not easy to break a country's pride. Are you planning to rampage with Einhorn again?」

「Are you thinking of me as such predictable person? I'm not a barbarian who will turn to something like war when I'm troubled. I'll solve this more peacefully.」

Jilk shrugged and smiled.

「Peacefully is it? If only the peace in the count's dictionary has the same meaning like our definition of peaceful.」

These guys got a lot of thorns in his words.

「Don't worry, I'll snap their pride for sure. Now then, we got to rescue Noelle first before that. I'm thinking to do it in the day of the marriage ceremony, what do you guys think?」

If you're going to do something, do it thoroughly.

Marie looked excited hearing my proposal.

「Finally Leon is getting serious! But, the enemy will also strengthen their security at the day of the marriage ceremony won't they?」

Chris put his hand on his chin and added on Marie's opinion.

「They assuredly will. It will be an important day for the commonwealth. They will surely gather a lot of soldiers and knights. In addition, the six great nobles will also gather at that day. If we cause a ruckus at such place, Barriere House will lose face—don't tell me, that's your aim?」

Making Barriere House lose face.

That was certainly tempting. It was one of the things that I was aiming for.

But, the enemy would only get angry with just that much.

「Do you think I'll end it with just that?」

Greg shook his head.

「Not at all. You're a human who can do something even more horrible.」

Thanks for the praise.

I absolutely wouldn't forget those words so you better remember this.

I spread out my hands in front of the eight people.

「Now, let's begin—we're going to break Alzer's pride so they won't be able to oppose us again.」

Everyone hesitantly cheered 「O-ou」 and raised their fist.

Be louder!

It would be the fun time after this.

.

## **Part 5**

Marie's mansion was enveloped in a sinister quiet in preparation for the marriage ceremony.

Cordelia was irritated.

「Really, just what is he thinking.」

Yumeria who was working together with her was looking worriedly at Cordelia.

「Will Leon-sama and others be alright?」

Creare was watching the two of them.

『They will be fine. Don't worry about that, just remember to buy the ingredients for eleven people when you two are going out for shopping okay?』

Cordelia looked at the sofa. On the sofa was a doll with Leon's face drawn.

The dolls of Julius and others who weren't home were also placed at other spots.

Sometimes robots would move their location.

Cordelia didn't understand just what they were doing.

「What is the meaning of doing this?」

『Oh, this is something very important you know? More importantly, aren't you acting too cold toward master? If you're a maid who are dispatched from a duke house, you should know that it's not good to mix work with personal affairs.』

「It's because Leon-sama! —It's because he is close with Marie even though he already has a wonderful fiancée like Angelica-sama.」

Yumeria tilted her head when she heard Cordelia's worry.

「Eh? But, although Leon-sama and Marie-sama are getting along well, it's not in the romantic sense at all.」

「Eh, is that true?」

「Yes. H-how I should say it—it feels like they are brother and sister.」

Cordelia couldn't say anything back after hearing that.

Cordelia had no experience going out with male.

It had been decided that she would serve the duke house since she was little. She also had a firm sense of virtue in her time as student and refrained from any romance.

In other words, she had no experience.

Creare also didn't deny Yumeria's opinion.

『Right. They are like brother and sister aren't they?』

「N-now that you mention it, I can kind of see it—b-but, it's a fact that right now Leon-sama is getting hooked on other woman!!」

『Oh, isn't it fine? Master is risking his life in order to save a poor woman who forced into marriage against her will. Isn't this what they call chivalry?』

「Political marriage is a common happening. If he gets in the way of that and cause an international incident, how many people will be troubled by that do you think?」

『Oh, are you in the supporting faction of political marriage? But the romance novels in your room also has the genre of a man coming to rescue his lover who is forced into political marriage isn't it?』

「H-how do you know that!? B-besides, reality and fantasy are different. Dream is beautiful because they are dream!」

Cordelia was acting like a dreaming teenage girl.

Yumeria was worried about Noelle.

「But, I heard that this woman is treated violently. The person herself also doesn't wish for the marriage. I don't really understand because the circumstance is too complicated but, I hope that she can be rescued.」

Cordelia sighed.

「Even I also wish for that, but there is also the bigger matter of the country. There are things where an individual shouldn't do as they please.」

Creare gave an advice to Cordelia there.

『I can understand you feeling too but, I hope you will evaluate master more closely without any biased view.』

Biased view—certainly when it came to Leon, her assessment would become slightly harsher.

Cordelia reflected on that.

Cordelia was also a maid who was working in this mansion.

She would immediately find out if Leon and Marie were in a romantic relationship, but she had never found any proof of that until now.

「Understood. There are also things that I should reflect on. I shall believe on Leon-sama more. But, will these things really be useful?」

Leon's doll that was sitting on the sofa leaned to the side and fell down.

.

## **Part 6**

There were silhouettes outside the mansion observing the situation inside.

They were hiding behind other building's cover while constantly keeping watch.

A pair of the watchers checked their watch.

「It will be time soon. How is the situation inside the mansion?」

「There is little movement. The eleven people are inside the mansion.」

「Watch them carefully. Today is an important day.」

「That's fine and all but, how about the harbor? There are two of the one-horned ships right?」

「The security fleet is on guard over there. The military is also dispatched, but there is no movement. There isn't anyone boarding the ships, so we can rest assured.」

The pair continued monitoring the mansion.

「—Even so, there is too little movement.」

「There is no problem as long as they are staying inside the mansion. If we can go through today, Loic-sama will become the guardian and we will also get released from this task.」

The lookouts who were dispatched from Barriere House were watching the mansion.

It was also the same at the harbor.

They didn't care of appearance anymore and even had a fleet watching Einhorn and Licorne.

If Leon and others made any movement, Loic would be immediately notified.

.

## Part 7

The sacred tree temple.

It was a place for the six great nobles to have meeting, but it was also used when the priestess was holding a ceremony.

Its usage was permitted today because the priestess would marry.

The members of the six great nobles who gathered in there were singing the praises of Loic.

The head of Faiviel House Lambert(ランベール) and the likes were blatantly buttering him up.

「Haha~, this is truly a joyous occasion. With this the guardian will be reinstated in Alzer. After all we can't let the brat from the kingdom to keep swaggering arrogantly forever. I have great expectation for you Loic-kun.」

The guardian would be able to receive the greatest blessing from the sacred tree.

The power from that would be immense.

Loic was gathering expectations on himself.

「Noelle is the priestess of the sapling you know? We still don't know how much power the guardian will be able to draw.」

「I-is that so? But, it's still really joyous for the priestess and the guardian to come back. With this Alzer can also be in peace.」

They obtained a new sacred tree's priestess.

Just that was already a good news for the commonwealth.

And then right now the priestess was going to choose the guardian.

The six great nobles were also holding big expectation.

Bellange glanced at Albergue.

「It has been a long time since a guardian appeared from among the six great nobles. The previous guardian was a commoner after all. Isn't that right Albergue?」

It was sarcasm toward Albergue.

Albergue closed his eyes and didn't reply.

Albergue was folding his arms without saying anything. Fernand was beside him.

「Acting chairman, you mustn't pay him any mind.」

Albergue was surly.

After Fernand soothed him down, he gave his blessing to Loic.

「I know. —Loic-kun, allow me to give you my congratulations.」

「Thank you very much, acting chairman.」

「This is an advice from me who was unable to obtain the guardian's crest in the past. Don't let your guard down till the very end.」

Albergue only said that and left the room. Bellange scoffed at him.

Fernand also followed Albergue and left the room, but before he went out he exchanged glance with Loic.

After the two of them went out, Bellange laughed.

「That was the howling of the loser. That guy is a pathetic man whose engagement with the priestess was canceled by the priestess herself. Loic, don't pay him any mind.」

「I know father. Even so, the acting chairman is also a pitiful person. After all he hasn't noticed that Fernand has jumped ship to our side.」

The other heads started to talk.

「Didn't the two of them quarreled a little yesterday?」

「He was argued down by that brat Fernand. In the end Albergue isn't that much of a big deal.」

「I'm looking forward to see what kind of face he will make when he learn Fernand's betrayal.」

All the houses other than Rault House were showing unity.

Something like this was extremely rare.

Loic said his thanks to Leon in his heart.

(We are united thanks to you. My thanks, sir hero.)

Ironically, the six great nobles were showing unity with Bellange at the center in front of the threat that came from Leon.

They were also feeling anxious because Albergue's attitude toward Leon looked servile to them.

Loic appeared like a light of hope at that timing.

(Your existence lent strength to me. The flow of the era is completely at my side. You can just watch from outside without being able to do anything.)

Loic was convinced of his victory.

Then a retainer of Barriere House entered the room.

「Everyone, it will be time soon.」

The marriage ceremony of Noelle and Loic was going to begin.

# **Chapter 11 – Bride Robber**

## **Part 1**

Noelle was looking at herself inside the mirror.

A beautiful wedding dress—but, a collar was attached on her neck.

The servants were decorating the collar so it wasn't seen, then Lelia entered the room.

「B-big sis」

Noelle smiled at the anxious looking Lelia.

「What's wrong?」

「A-are you alright?」

*What do you mean alright?* She thought, but she replied gently.

「I'm nervous but, that's all I think. You too, be happier. With this we can return to be noble again.」

Lelia looked down, but there were only the servants of Barriere House around them.

She couldn't speak her true feeling.

But, Noelle had a feeling of guilt toward Lelia.

「—Sorry. You won't get dragged like this if only I didn't get discovered.」

She felt guilty for dragging Lelia into this.

Lelia shook her head.

「I, I'm fine. But, big sis you—」

The servants interrupted their talk.

「Noelle-sama, it's time. Lelia-sama too, please leave.」

Noelle immediately turned expressionless after Lelia was driven out.

Noelle was also a girl.

She had a longing toward the image of a bride.

However, even when she was dressed like this—she felt so sad it felt like tears would spill out.

(Really, how did it become like this)

A single crest was throwing her life into chaos like this.

She really hated it.

.

## **Part 2**

The venue was really wide.

There were pillars that were made to look like the sacred tree. They supported the high ceiling. The stained glass had the picture of the sacred tree.

The light that shined in from there was really pretty. Light was also shining in from the ceiling.

Noelle was walking through a path that was illuminated by light. She looked at the guests around her.

All of them were people who possessed crest.

They were the chosen people of the sacred tree.

They were nobles. They were celebrating the new priestess—and the guardian that would be born after this.

There were few people who were seeing Noelle as herself.

(—Even though they aren't even interested at me myself.)

What was important was the crest and the priestess position.

The bridge that connected the sacred tree and the people—the existence that was lost and sought after by the commonwealth.

None of them was wishing for the personal happiness of Noelle.

Most of them were thinking that she would surely be happy if she was married with Loic.

(I didn't wish for something like this. What I wished for was—)

Even though she was thinking that, there was no replacement for the priestess position.

Noelle had no freedom.

(I was really stupid to be happy like that when the crest appeared. That's right, this is the destiny of the person who possess the priestess's crest. I'll be bound to the sacred tree for my whole life.)

The future she wished for wouldn't come true.

(What do you mean the priestess will be tied together with the person she loves. It's just a lie in the end.)

She didn't run even then because the collar wouldn't let go of Noelle.

Also, this was for Alzer's sake.

Noelle hated the nobles.

Although extreme people like Pierre were few among the nobles who were in the possession of crest, all of them were still arrogant.

It was always the commoners that were suffering.

The nobles were conceited because they couldn't lose and continued doing defensive battles, but it was the commoners that received the damage.

Those who died in the war were the people who didn't possess the crest.

It was rare for noble to die in war because they had the power of the crest.

She loved Alzer.

But, she hated the nobles that ruled this country.

She became a priestess was also for the sake of the people.

(But—allow me to choose who the guardian is at the very least. Why it has to be Loic)

When she arrived in front of a stone status of the sacred tree at the back of the venue, Bellange was waiting there.

The sacred tree was considered as a divinity at Alzer. The six great nobles who had a position close to it sometimes would also act like a substitute priest.

Behind Bellange—on his back, the crest that Bellange had was floating.

In this kind of ceremony, there was a custom for the priest substitute to show their crest to the surrounding to indicate that they were the witness of the ceremony.

For an important event like today, a lot of the time it would be one of the head of the six great nobles who served as the priest substitute.

Bellange talked to the two with a small voice.

「You two look great. Now then, let's have priestess-sama grant the guardian's crest to Loic here. You understand how to do it right?」

She had been taught how to do it beforehand.

The priestess just needed to talk to the sacred tree inside her heart  
「This is the person who is worthy to be the guardian」.

Noelle looked toward Loic and joined her hands together in a praying posture.

Although she was hesitating whether it would really be alright to grant the guardian's crest to Loic, she had no other choice.

(Sacred tree—this person is my guardian. Please, grant him the crest of the guardian.)

When Noelle offered her prayer, the priestess's crest on the back of her right hand manifested a meter behind Noelle. Its size was around three meter.

The guests who saw that were excited to see the priestess's crest.

「Oo, finally!」

「Alzer's future is bright with this.」

「And then the guardian's crest—the crest?」

But, even though Noelle's priestess's crest had appeared, nothing happened after that.

After this the guardian's crest should be appearing behind Loic just like the priestess's crest.

With that the marriage between the priestess and the guardian would be sealed in stone but—nothing appeared even after they waited for a while.

Loic was gritting his teeth.

「Noelle, are you planning to betray me in this place?」

「I-I'm doing it. I'm properly—」

She strongly prayed one more time.

(Sacred tree-sama, please listen to my voice. The man before me is your guardian. He is the one who will protect you.)

Even though she was praying desperately, the guardian's crest wouldn't appear on Loic.

Not only that—she could hear a voice.

The sapling's voice that only Noelle could hear sounded like the voice of a little girl.

But, the sapling wouldn't accept Noelle's request.

The voice's way of speaking sounded clumsy, but Noelle could feel the strong rejection in it.

Noelle opened her eyes.

「—Eh?」

Noelle let go of her praying posture in surprise. Bellange was losing his composure seeing that and spoke to her with a small voice.

「Priestess-sama, can you hurry it up? Or perhaps, you're planning to shame us in this place?」

Noelle shook her head.

She had no such intention.

But the sacred tree was rejecting her prayer.

「N-no. I have prayed properly. But, but—it was rejected.」

The word 'rejected' echoed through the place that had fallen silent.

The venue became noisy.

The center of Loic's face crumpled and he grabbed Noelle's neck.

「Noelle, you're just saying that to...!」

Noelle grabbed Loic's hand with both her hands, but she was unable to shake him off.

Loic grabbed Noelle's neck with both his hands.

The surrounding got into an uproar. Bellange tried to stop Loic, but the crest of a great noble appeared behind him.

Loic's crest produced flame so that no one could approach.

Even Bellange couldn't get near.

「Loic stop! Don't kill the priestess!」

Loic's fingers were sinking into Noelle's throat.

「tsu!」

Loic was laughing seeing Noelle unable to make any voice.

「I should have done this from the start if you won't become mine!  
」

Just when Noelle prepared herself to die like this, she heard a voice.

A lisping young voice was talking inside her head.

*The guardian is coming*—it said. *He is coming to protect the priestess*, it said.

(Guardian? I, I haven't chosen anyone. And yet, how can the guardian—)

Her neck was being choked painfully. Loic's flame was also burning her wedding dress.

Then, the ceiling's glass was smashed and a black armor descended.

It was Arroganz(アロガンツ).

Leon's voice resounded inside the venue.

〔I came to take back the bride!〕

His voice sounded really delighted.

With the intrusion of Arroganz wind drowned out the raging flame inside the venue.

Loic was also sent flying. Noelle also tumbled down and looked at Leon who came out from Arroganz.

He was wearing a white tuxedo.

(That look really suited him.)

It was strange that she was thinking like that. She was embarrassed to feel happy at Leon's appearance.

Loic looked at Leon who was looking down on him and yelled angrily.

「What are you doing here! Don't tell me, you are planning to kidnap the bride? How dare you coming here wearing white tuxedo like that—we will lodge a protest to the kingdom about this.」

Other armors were also coming from the surrounding and jeers were thrown at Leon.

But Leon didn't panic.

He raised the submachine gun he brought and pulled the trigger, spraying the bullets around. The guests screamed.

And then—he spoke out words that shocked everyone.

「This must be what they mean by the guilty is shouting the loudest. Is stealing other person's bride and forcing her into marriage is the so called elegant way of Alzer? You are calling other people barbarian but, you guys are the real barbarian here. It'll be better for you guys to reflect on yourself for a bit.」

What was this guys saying?

Bellange was also protesting.

「What are you saying after smashing your way into here with armor while an important ceremony is in progress! In the first place, how did you enter here? The military around the sacred tree temple—」

Leon was laughing flippantly.

「Haha~, it was really difficult you know. After all I had entered this place since yesterday. A certain someone ordered to have my mansion watched, so it was really time consuming to set up some tricks.」

Loic clicked his tongue and ordered the soldiers who rushed inside to fire.

「Kill him!」

It was stupid of him to come out from his armor.

He was exposing his flesh body.

Noelle yelled at Leon.

「Leon run!」

Then Loic who was irritated by that—pulled his left hand toward himself.

A chain appeared from Noelle's collar and she was pulled toward Loic.

Loic's arm constricted around Noelle's neck.

「Shut up!」

Seeing that, Leon tossed his submachine gun into the cockpit.

The soldiers around him were firing their guns at him, but an invisible wall was blocking the bullets from hitting him.

Leon threw off his white glove and pointed his right hand at Loic and others.

「—Don't keep getting cocky. Kneel.」

Right after that, behind Leon—behind Arroganz, a large magic circle formed.

It was a large magic circle that was almost six meter in isze—the crest of the guardian.

Loic and others turned speechless in front of the guardian's crest that was shining faint green.

Noelle was also the same.

(Why is the crest on Leon—even though, I still haven't chose)

Noelle only learned now that the sapling had given the guardian's crest to Leon.

.

## **Part 3**

Leon possessed the guardian's crest.

Louise was rooted on the spot at that sight. She ignored the clamor Hughes was making beside her.

「Why is that guy in the possession of the guardian's crest!? Louise, do you know about this by any chance!?」

The night of that day.

Louise didn't return home and went back to Druille House in order to cooperate with Leon and others.

She helped with their preparation from there.

But right now what was more important was Leon's appearance.

(—Leon)

Louise recalled her little brother—Leon Sara Rault.

It was something that happened before Leon died.

His engagement with Noelle was decided and he was getting into high spirits because he would be able to become the guardian.

She remembered Albergue making a troubled face at that time.

But, he also looked happy to hear that his son would be able to become the guardian.

She recalled her conversation with her excited little brother at that time.

(Yes, if I'm not mistaken—Leon said to me—)

The young Leon said to Louise.

『Onee-chan, I'm the next guardian you know! Amazing right!』

『It's amazing but, I wonder if Leon can really become the guardian. Because, the guardian is a splendid person you know?』

『I can! When I become the guardian, I'll become a guardian that protect everyone.』

『Everyone?』

『Yep! The sacred tree and the priestess, and then the nobles and the commoners too—I'll protect all the people in the commonwealth!』

『Ee~, I wonder if Leon can really protect them. Even though you can't even win against me.』

『I-I'll win against Onee-chan soon! And then I'll also protect Onee-chan!』

『Yes yes. I'll be waiting without expecting too much.』

『You said it! I'll protect Onee-chan for sure so remember it!』

Her little brother who said something like that was too adorable that she hugged him.

But—a few months after that Leon died.

He was buried under a cold tombstone with rain falling in drops at the day of the burial.

She recalled the words that the young Louise who was wearing a black dress muttered in front of the tombstone.

『You liar—even though you said that you will protect Onee-chan.—You won't be able to protect me if you die.』

Her little brother couldn't become the guardian, and he also couldn't save the people.

He couldn't even save himself.

But—in front of Louise, Leon appeared with the guardian's crest in him.

(—Leon)

That overseas student Leon who came from Hohlfahrt Kingdom though, he gave an order in front of the soldiers of the commonwealth.

「Are you guys deaf? Your heads are too high you small fries.  
Prostrate before the guardian's crest!」

—That figure was far removed from the guardian who would protect everyone.

.

## **Part 4**

I could see clearly the people of Alzer in confusion before me.

They must have no idea of what to do when I appeared with the guardian's crest.

Even the head of Barriere House Bellange was blinking in confusion.

After all no matter how many times he looked, the crest floating behind me belonged to the guardian.

「Now then, how about you return the bride now, you bunch of thieves. Do you know? The priestess and the guardian are one set. In other words, it's you guys who stole Noelle from me. No matter how you think about it, this is barbaric isn't it?」

From the convention of Alzer, it was Loic who was cutting in line.

Well, the truth was I was the one who stole Noelle from Loic though.

「Even so you guys are really shameless huh. You even hold a marriage ceremony this grand. Could it be, you guys are seriously thinking that Loic can be chosen as the guardian? No way. Just no way. Absolutely no way.」

I said everything I wanted to say in front of the commonwealth bunch.

There were a lot of annoying things that had happened, so I'd spill out everything at this chance.

From here Lambert's vexed face was also clearly visible.

「This guardian thing, simply put a strong human who can protect the sacred tree will be the one chosen for the position right? Even though originally the possibility of the six great nobles being chosen

is high, the sapling chose me—about this, aren't you guys not chosen because you guys are just unreliable? In other words, the sapling is recognizing that I'm stronger than even the six great nobles, isn't that right?」

After I said that, I could hear the surrounding saying things like 「Don't screw around!」「You insolent!」「How dare you!」 and the like. But it only sounded like the howl of losers for me.

In fact, there was nothing but losers here.

「It's the truth right? In the first place, what could be the reason for the sacred tree to not choose any priestess and guardian until now?」

The surrounding instantly fell silent when I touched the sensitive problem for Alzer.

It felt really good.

I'd stirred them up real good to vent my stress.

U~n, provoking people and preaching at them made me feels like I've become a big shot myself, it feels real good!

It would feel really unpleasant if someone did something like that to me though! But I'll do it!

「The sacred tree would choose the existence that should protect it, isn't that right? In other words—it's saying that there isn't anyone worthy from among you guys isn't it? It's not only the sapling, aren't you guys abandoned even by the sacred tree itself?」

The guests' anger was directed at me when I laughed.

「But, I guess it can't be helped. It's you guys who lost against foreigner like me. Even the sacred tree will give up you all as hopeless.」

Oh, had they been bothered by it? the guests were getting red faced.

Then I'd poke more at where it hurt!

「Don't be angry just because I hit the bull's eye. I'm only coming here to take Noelle back. Even though I tried to take her back peacefully, I was shocked that you guys are getting strangely heated up.」

The traitor Fernand was looking up at me in frustration.

And then he addressed me.

「—My apologies. This is also unexpected for us. If possible, I hope you can get down here. Let's talk.」

It was my principle to not trust a traitor.

「There isn't any need for talk. Hand over my priestess. Plain and simple right? After all it looks like I've the duty to protect the sapling and priestess. Sapling-chan will scold me if I don't take her back from you thieves.」

Fernand tried to keep persisting but, it seemed Loic reached the limit of his patience first.

「You're just keep saying whatever you like since some time ago! I was the first one to love Noelle! Noelle belongs to me! I won't hand her to anyone. If someone is going to take her away, I'd rather!」

Loic drew out the ceremonial sword hanging on his waist. Screams filled the venue.

I immediately gave the instruction.

「Luxion!」

〔There is no problem. —Do whatever master like.〕

A sword flew out from the cockpit.

I caught that and unsheathed it while jumping down.

There was five to six meters until the floor. It was a bit scary but I endured.

Knights and soldiers stepped forward to stop me, so I reversed the single edge sword and struck them with the back of the blade.

A lot of the knights relied completely on their crest. They were shoddy when it came to pure combat technique.

「You sir knights of Alzer are really weak. It's falling mark for you guys if this is in the kingdom!」

I could hear Luxion's voice.

〔The boys in the kingdom are training in order to finance the girls after all. They faced monster in dungeon risking their life to earn money and support the female students financially. Their strength are obtained at the end of such tearjerking effort.〕

Stop! I'm crying.

But, there was no choice but to become strong in such place.

Became strong, survive through the dungeons that were crawling with monsters, and obtained money.

The strength that I obtained for that was being useful right now.

I defeated the knights and soldiers and drew near to Loic, then I pointed my right hand.

A crest was floating behind Loic. Flame came out from there and gathered onto Loic's right hand, creating a huge fireball.

「Do you think that you can win against me without armor!」

「If it's the power of crest then I also have it! —But, I'm not going to use it against you.」

When Loic fired the fireball, I split the fireball with my sword.

The bisected fireball burst apart, leaving me unharmed.

I watched Loic looking shocked and reversed my hold on my sword.

I crouched and closed the distance with Loic. Without stopping—I cut off his right arm.

Perhaps from Loic's point of view it looked like I closed the distance in an instant.

With his right arm severed, he became unable to receive energy from the sacred tree and the crest on his back vanished.

I kicked Loic away, stepped on him, and then thrust my blade into his left arm.

Loic was screaming.

「M-my arm! MY ARMMMMMM!」

「Shut up. It's you who made me need to go this far.」

I took away the bracelet from Loic's left arm.

The surrounding couldn't make any movement in front of us.

Loic who tried to kill the priestess.

And then, I who possessed the guardian's crest.

They must be unable to think what they should do here.

But, there should also be some people who would take action soon.

I wore the bracelet that was splattered with blood on my left arm, then offered my hand to Noelle who was sitting on the floor.

「Noelle, come.」

—But, Noelle was crying and rejected me.

She shook her head and strongly rejected me.

「Stop it. Why are you doing something like this! Even though I tried to forget you. You're really the worst, doing something like this! Do you know how much I—how much I!」



I could understand Noelle's feeling, but there was no time so I forcefully carried her on my shoulder.

When I shouldered the struggling Noelle, the people around surrounded us.

When I looked at Loic, people who could use healing magic gathered around him and connected the arm that I severed.

「Oh, you guys are going to oppose me who has the guardian's crest?」

Fernand came in front of me.

He had a weapon in hand. He was also preparing to use the crest's power.

「Even if you are the guardian, there is no way we can hand over the priestess to you!」

It seemed the surrounding also felt the same.

They surrounded us and pointed their weapons and crests this way.

「It's good that you have some guts to fight. But have you forgotten?」

Fernand yelled even when I looked up at Arroganz.

「We also have armors at our side!」

Armors broke through windows and attacked Arroganz that had become unmanned.

The surrounding thought that they would be able to focus on me after seeing the armors breaking through the windows.

But—naïve.

「Don't think that Arroganz can be stopped with just this much.」

Without any pilot inside, Arroganz turned toward the armors that were moving to grab at it—and crushed their heads with its grips.

Fernand was shocked.

「It's moving even though it's empty? No, is there someone inside!?」

The correct answer was that it could move even without pilot. But there wasn't any need to teach him so I stayed quiet.

「Look, open a path quickly. The guardian-sama is passing through! Wait, Noelle, don't struggle. I'm begging you.」

「Let go! Just let go!」

Noelle was crying while struggling on my shoulder, so it was hard for me to carry her.

Fernand yelled when he saw that.

「Protect the priestess! Leon-dono, the priestess is refusing you. We can't let you pass through!」

Albergue-san came at that timing.

「Everyone lower your weapon!」

Louise-san was also beside him.

Albergue-san glared at Bellange who was sitting on the floor.

「Bellange, I'll question you in detail later. Also, I won't permit any rudeness to the guardian!」

The knights and soldiers lowered their weapon at the acting chairman's order.

Fernand protested at Albergue-san.

「Acting chairman, are you saying we should just overlook this!」

「Calm down. How can we bring out the weapons if we are going to talk. Also Fernand, I know that you are also involved in this.」

Fernand also looked down, and then he lowered his weapon.

Bellange sat down on the floor and held his head in his hands.

「You idiot son」

And how was that idiot son Loic doing?

Everyone's gaze gathered on him. The doctors were looking stumped.

Albergue-san asked as everyone's representation.

「How is Loic doing?」

The doctor answered.

「T-that, after we connected his arm, he forced himself and went outside—」

Right after that, an explosion occurred somewhere in the sacred tree temple and the building started to shake.

Louise-san looked at me.

「Wait a second Leon-kun, things are over already.」

Please wait. Could you not make everything to be my fault?

I certainly set up some bombs, but I still hadn't pushed the switch.

「—I still haven't pushed the switch though?」

There were a lot of people who made a face that asked *You really set up some?*. There were also some people who looked at each other wondering from where the explosion came from.

Amidst them, Bellange stood up and started to get flustered.

「That idiot son, don't tell me he want to pile up even more shame  
on top of this!？」

.

## **Part 5**

An armor smashed through the sacred tree temple's wall and went outside.

It was an armor that Barriere House owned, a custom made one.

The weapons of Alzer had the mechanism to receive energy from the sacred tree.

It had the requirement that its pilot needed to have a crest, but its performance was several level above armor of similar specs.

The commonwealth was undefeated in defensive battle because they were relying in the capability of this kind of weapon.

And then, among the armors that Barriere House owned, there was armor that could only be used by the six great nobles.

Originally it was given the role to stand out as a commander's ride. It was designed with the premise that it would be a member of the six great nobles riding it with their capability to receive abundant energy from the sacred tree.

Its frame was large and its crimson armor had sharp design.

It was created to stand out. It looked like it had wings on its back.

Its creation was putting emphasis on appearance, but its performance was also extremely high.

Loic went into the cockpit and grabbed the control stick with his arms wrapped in bloody bandages.

Red light was dwelling inside Loic's eyes.

「Sacred tree! Lend me strength to burn everything to ash!  
Everything. Give everything to me!」

He forgot himself in his rage and moved the machine to do nothing but destroying everything.

Crest formed behind the armor, increasing its power output.

The output was increasing so much until it was burdening every part of the armor, then Loic drew out the armor's sword.

Flame coiled around it. A slash flew out when he swung the sword.

The flame flew in the shape of crescent moon and destroyed the wall of the temple.

The temple exploded and burned.

「Burn! Burn everything! Noelle—and that man too! BURN EVERYONE WHO DOESN'T RECOGNIZE MEEEEEE!!」

Loic felt that even more energy than usual was flowing into him from the sacred tree.

His arms that were cut by Leon throbbed.

His hatred was increasing with each throbbing.

「Come out Leon. I'll kill you in front of Noelle's eyes. I'll make her regret for not choosing me—」

The guests were running out from the temple.

An airship and armors that were guarding the temple noticed the commotion and approached.

The airship and armors had the crest of Druille House. It seemed Hughes who ran away from the temple was boarding the ship.

That Hughes called out to Loic.

『Loic, stop it already! Don't destroy the temple. There was a communication from Nii-san that the plan is already cancelled!』

Loic's mouth took a crescent shape at Hughes who conveyed the instruction from Fernand.

「You Fernand's flunky, don't order me around!」

Loic's armor pointed its left hand. Flame burst out from there and burned the airship that Hughes boarded.

The airship was falling. The armors of Druille House aimed their weapons.

『Hughes-sama!』

『Loic-dono, what have you done!』

『Stop it right away!』

Loic cut down the airship and armors that were converging toward him with his sword.

The slashed armors exploded.

『Stop? I don't give a damn anymore to the plan! I—I just need Noelle alone, and yet!』

Bloodshot red light was dwelling inside the eyes of Loic who was laughing while crying.

Then Arroganz that was boarded by the hateful Leon flew out from the temple.

『Aa~aa, now you're rampaging. Even though I planned to finish it more peacefully.』

When Leon came out, the crest shining on the armor's back brightened.

Loic yelled at Leon.

『So you show up—fiendish knight!』

The red armor flew toward Arroganz to stab it with its sword.

Arroganz dodged that and swung the battle axe that it took out from the backpack just as the armor passed through. The shoulder armor was cut off.

『Too shallow huh.』

Loic felt like his head was boiling from rage, even so he observed Leon's movement.

(Shit-! You damn barbarian from the kingdom! It looks like he is used to pilot armor. But, he dodged my attack, that means he want to avoid a contest of power—I have the advantage in size. I'll overcome this battle with the difference in specs!)

The red armor was bigger than Arroganz.

From the appearance, it felt like the red armor was stronger in mass and power.

「It looks like you're confident in your armor's specs, but my armor is custom made by Barriere House! It also has no worry of running out of mana with the energy supply from the sacred tree. But, how about you? Even if you can receive energy from the sapling, it won't even be a fight against the sacred tree!!」

Even if both sides were receiving backup from sacred tree, the sacred tree that had supported the commonwealth for many years and the sapling were far too different in power level no matter how one looked at it.

Armor specs.

Sacred tree's divine protection.

Taking all of those into consideration, it was a difference that couldn't be overcame no matter what with just the pilot's skill—that was what Loic thought.

The red armor swung around its sword and started to push back Arroganz.

The knights and soldiers of the commonwealth who were watching that—the airships and the armors were watching without taking any action.

In their heart they wished for Leon to lose.

When the red armor swung down its sword, Arroganz blocked it with its battle axe.

The flame that was coiling around the sword vanished and the blade shined brighter.



The heat increased further, melting the battle axe while cutting through it.

「I'll bisect you just like this!」

Then—there was a voice other than Leon.

『How long are you planning to play around, master?』

Leon answered that voice with a tone of enjoyment.

『No, it looks like he is getting heated up, so I thought of making it more dramatic.』

Leon didn't show any sign of panicking.

Loic thought he was bluffing.

「You impudent!」

Leon's voice deepened as though to tell him that he was getting serious.

『I'll teach you the correct way to take mount position, greenhorn.  
』

.

## **Part 6**

Loic was planning to win against Arroganz by relying on the armor's spec.

Luxion was irritated by that.

『I can't go along with master's game.』

「Don't say that. The spectators are also getting excited aren't they?」

The voices of Alzer's people that Luxion intercepted could be heard.

『Destroy that kingdom's armor!』

『I-is it alright for us to not help? The acting chairman order us to stop Loic-sama—』

『We couldn't get near. We just need to say that. It's a judgment made based on the on-site situation!』

What a horrible bunch.

Well, the military in this area was from Barriere House and Druille House.

I never expected them to proactively help me.

Loic's armor turned its sword's blade red like a heat sword.

It was a weapon to melt the enemy armor while cutting through with its high heat.

『Master』

It seemed Luxion was irritated with me who was pretending to be in a disadvantage.

It must be vexing for him that Arroganz was losing.

「What an impatient guy. —The fun is only starting from now.」

Arroganz was backing away from the push of the larger armor, but then I gradually increased the engine's power while the armors were in sword-locking contest.

Arroganz that had been pushed back until now stopped moving—and slowly started to push Loic's armor back.

I could hear Loic's panicked voice.

『Is the power output decreasing!? Dammit, this piece of junk!』

Loic was blaming the armor. He couldn't see the reality.

『Loic, don't you blame the armor. That armor is excellent. The disappointing one—is you.』

Blue flame burst form Arroganz's engine nozzle and started to push back the red armor.

And then I also took out a sword from the backpack.

Arroganz took it with its left hand and cut Loic's sword with it.

『—Wha-!』

The severed blade twirled in the air. When it stabbed into the ground, white smoke burst out with sizzling sound from how hot it was.

『Slow reaction. Not the armor, but the pilot.』

When Arroganz kicked, the red armor bent backward and got sent flying.

The pilot's skill was shoddy and couldn't fix the armor's posture midair.

Arroganz threw its battle axe and cut off the left arm of the red armor that was slowly trying to get up.

Screams came from the onlookers, but it sounded like cheers for me.

「That armor is wasted on you~. You can only use it to this degree even though its specs are that high. The black knight old man was far scarier than this. If that person ride that armor, it would be completely out of hand.」

It gave me a chill recalling that time.

The memory of me screwing around and gotten beaten up viciously is coming back.

I didn't want to go through something like that anymore but—it was necessary today so I'd screw around.

「Haha~, I'm really glad that you're my opponent. Because—even with the sacred tree's divine protection, you're still small fry at the inside. Besides, the sacred tree's divine protection is also not a big deal at all!」

When I laughed, I could hear the onlookers sending their anger at me.

Their conversations that Luxion picked up were only repeating things like 『Please allow us to shoot that guy!』 or 『That bastard, how dare he make fun of us!』 or 『Please give the permission to attack that guy!』 .

The weak point of Alzer's people was speech that called them small fries who could only rely on their crest huh!

I'd remember it firmly in mind.

The red armor was standing up.

I watched it standing up while provoking Loic.

「Come on, get serious. Or perhaps this is already your best? Try defeating me with the divine protection you're so proud of. Cause I'll take you on! Give it your all—cause I'll crush you like the small fry you are no matter what you do!」

I would face the opponent who challenged me with their full power, defended against everything using the difference in armor specs, and won on top of that.

That was the correct way of taking mount position.

The red armor's crest on its back enlarged even more and even blazed up.

Several fireballs were fired from there, but Arroganz easily dodged them.

The fireballs themselves were huge, but they had no speed.

Also they had no density.

They only swelled up bigly.

Although he was receiving a lot of energy, he was unable to control it.

It was just like a shower's nozzle.

Even if the shower had a lot of water supply, the nozzle clogged the flow and only a bit of the water could spray out.

It was really a waste.

「Oi oi, is that the best you can do? There is a limit in how disappointing you can be. Don't you have any other hidden ace? The armor's appearance is really deceptive! Are you perhaps running out of trick alreadyyy!」

When I laughed, the red armor charged at Arroganz.

I put away the weapon and made Arroganz stopped the approaching red armor—with one hand.

Even though the armors collided midair, Arroganz almost wasn't moved at all. The red armor that got its momentum killed was the

one that got bounced back by the impact. Its armor was dented from the collision.

Loic must be getting shaken intensely inside there.

I kicked the armor flying so that there was a distance created between us, then I made Arroganz hold a rifle.

I aimed the rifle's muzzle and told Loic where I was going to shoot.

「I'm aiming at your right leg, so let's see how you block or dodge it.  
」

『Kuh!』

Loic let out a pained voice and tried to escape by materializing the crest in front of the armor to be used as shield.

Luxion spoke when he saw that.

『That shield pattern has already been analyzed.』

When I pulled the trigger, the bullet pierced through the right leg of the red armor that was darting around and destroyed it.

Naturally the shield was also pierced through.

Loic was losing his composure seeing that.

『Th-the sacred tree's divine protection is pierced—』

「Don't think that other country won't take any countermeasure forever. Just piercing through your prided divine protection is already possible.」

Well, it was a lie.

But saying that would instigate their sense of danger more.

「Yosh, next is your right arm.」

It looked like Loic couldn't accept what just happened. He used the power of his crest to layer even more shields.

He layered three shields and even thickened them further.

『—It's pointless.』

It was just as Luxion said.

When I pulled the trigger, the bullet pierced all those shields and blew away the red armor's right arm.

『Let's speed it up! Next is your left leg!』

I was showing the commonwealth the sight of the crest getting easily pierced and the newest armor of Barriere House getting beaten up.

『What, is that thing just a target? I heard that Alzer's armor is powerful, but it's not as scary as the rumor made it out to be huh. If it's like this then it looks like we can just attack right away. Perhaps I'll advise his majesty to invade Alzer. I'll tell him, if we don't hurry then other country is going to snatch it from us, something like that! The commonwealth is going to be a nice hunting ground!』

When I said that while destroying Loic's armor, the military of the commonwealth around us were starting to get scared.

I approached the red armor that had lost its limbs and lifted it up by grabbing its head.

I pressed the rifle's muzzle on the cockpit and talked to Loic.

『You're really just a small fry. It's disappointing that the sacred tree's divine protection is only this much.』

『D-dammit』

I could hear Loic's frustrated voice.

I was the one frustrated here.

If only you were more decent—if only you interacted with Noelle normally, it wouldn't become like this.

The development of Noelle falling in love with me wouldn't be possible.

There was a limit in how jealous you could be.

「Perhaps Noelle hated you because you're this weak. You put on airs even though you're a weakling, then you caused trouble by dragging your surrounding too—you're the worst. I can understand how Noelle can hate you.」

『You bastard understand nothing! Just what do you know—I like Noelle! I love her!』

「Too bad! Noelle doesn't like you, much less loving you. Rather she hate your guts!」

She never said anything like that, but with her current state there was no way she would be able to accept him anymore.

If a girl I liked told me 「I hate your guts」 —it made me wanted to cry just imagining it. I didn't feel like I would be able to get back on my feet anymore if Ange and Livia said something like that to me.

It seemed Loic was also the same.

『If only. If only you never appeared in front of us!』

「It would still be the same. Even then Noelle wouldn't choose you.」

『YOUUUUUUUU!!』

He still tried resisting even with a gun muzzle pointed at him. He didn't try begging for his life or anything.

This guy was really troublesome.

Loic's heart didn't show any sign of breaking at all.

But the military that was watching this battle was about to get their heart broken instead.

An owner of great noble crest couldn't win against Arroganz even after piloting the best armor of the commonwealth.

Far from winning, he even got toyed around. In front of such reality, they were shown just how weak they were.

Luxion warned me.

『Master, the enemy armor is running out of control. It's going to explode due to excessive supply of energy. Please withdraw immediately.』

「Eh? Oi, can Loic escape from there!？」

『Perhaps he himself has noticed but—it looks like he has no intention of escaping.』

「Shit!」

I stored away the rifle and made Arroganz forcefully opened the cockpit's hatch. I saw Loic inside.

His face that was glaring at me was oozing out madness.

「Get out from there already you stupid bastard!」

Loic was laughing.

『I'll take you to hell with me. I'll self-explode just like this. I'll blow you to smithereens!』

Wooden roots grew out from Loic's crest and entangled Arroganz.

「What!？」

Luxion reproached me.

『This is because master keep playing around.』

Luxion wrestled the control from me and Arroganz forcefully started to tear off the roots and ivies.

After that it immediately grabbed Loic and tore him away from the cockpit.

The red armor was going out of control and let out smokes. Arroganz kicked it away and it exploded grandly in the air.

Arroganz covered Loic with both hands while taking distance from the explosion—Luxion was puzzled by the power of the explosion.

『—The explosion's power is bigger than expected.』

『That was dangerous.』

『The power of the crest also had bigger output than expected. It's concerning.』

『Either way, everything is over with this.』

Loic had fainted when we landed slowly on the ground.

.

## **Part 7**

Loic was surrounded by soldiers when he opened his eyes.

「—This place」

His arms and legs were receiving treatment, but the doctors looked at his right hand and shook their head.

「My lord, it's unfortunate but young master's divine protection is vanishing.」

Bellange looked down on Loic with cold eyes, but he immediately didn't even look at him anymore.

「Protectionless huh—well, this guy cannot be used anymore anyway. Proceed with the disinheritance procedure. There are other important things right now. Dealing with the aftermath is going to be troublesome.」

Arroganz was there ahead of Bellange's gaze.

He was looking really frustrated.

They lost not only in airship, but also armor technology.

No, it seemed his frustration stemmed from the defeat of the six great nobles.

When Loic lifted up his upper body while receiving treatment, Noelle came with Leon in tow.

Around her there were also the noble youths from the kingdom other than Leon following along like guards.

Noelle crouched when she arrived at Loic's side and put her gaze at the same level of his.

Loic looked at Noelle and laughed flippantly.

「Are you here to laugh at me? Are you here to laugh at me who lost pathetically and even lost my divine protection? But, I still won't give up. Noelle, you are mi—」

Noelle slapped him.

Loic immediately glared at Noelle, but his expression changed into bewilderment.

「W-why are you crying?」

Noelle was crying.

Tears were dripping down in large drops from her eyes.

Noelle looked down to not show her face and spoke loudly.

「!! I grew to hate you not because you are weak! Loic, you, one day you started treating me like an object. No matter what I did you would say that I wasn't appropriate for you, that you would buy me more expensive things!」

It was the story before Loic got hated.

When he became close with Noelle, there was one time when they accidentally met in the city and had good time together.

At that time, Loic wanted Noelle to become a woman who was appropriate for him and complained at Noelle's conducts. From Loic's perspective he was just giving her advice.

「T-that was for your sake!」

「!! —I would be fine with just normal things. Having fun together, eating, shopping—I wanted to enjoy them more. And yet, you rejected everything of me.」

Loic recalled what Noelle said to him.

When Noelle said that she wanted to ride a boat, he refused her by saying that he would prepare an airship.

When they were going to have meal, Noelle wanted to enter a restaurant that was just slightly expensive, but he said that such restaurant was unpleasant and headed to a high class restaurant.

When shopping too, the accessory that Noelle wanted was cheap thing, so he rejected it and gave her a present of something that was to his liking.

Noelle said.

「I'm not a good match for you. I realized that and stop going out with you. and yet, you chased me around. You even put a collar that couldn't be taken off for life on me!」

The cursed collar that was around Noelle's neck.

Leon was wearing the bracelet for the master.

Noelle stared at Loic sadly.

「Loic—are you, really looking at me? You wouldn't recognize me. I didn't want that, that was why I came to hate you.」

Loic couldn't say anything back. It was then Albergue and Louise came with some people in tow.

Among them there was also Lelia with Emile escorting her.

Noelle asked Loic.

「Loic, do you know what my favorite thing is?」

Loic hung his head down.

—He was shocked to realize that he didn't know even one thing that Noelle liked.

# ***Chapter 12 – Ordinary Day***

## ***Part 1***

The next day after crashing into the marriage ceremony.

I had returned to the mansion and facing Noelle right now.

Noelle slapped me.

I could dodge it but—I chose to receive it.

「Are you satisfied?」

「You're really the worst. Even though you don't think anything of me, you came to save me—don't make have any strange expectation like this!」

The reason for Noelle's anger was complicated.

It seemed she was thankful that I came to save her but, she was angry at why a man with fiancées was doing something like this.

It was only natural for her to have such thoughts.

To be honest—I found it hard to understand why she chose me.

Just what was going on with my popular period?

Was it because such period never came in my previous life that it was now descending on me with interests?

Noelle shed tears and she wiped it with her hand.

「Don't make me expecting anything like this. Even though I want to forget—I won't be able to forget if you do something like this.」

I would return to the kingdom in less than a year.

Noelle's treatment was still not decided but, we couldn't be together even if I brought her back with me.

「I'm sorry. Even so—I wanted to save you.」

Noelle shook her head at my apology.

「Actually I also want to thank you. I want thank you a lot! But—spare me from this. It's painful to fall in love with someone who has fiancée.」

I almost reached out at the crying Noelle.

I thought whether I should hug her but I gave up.

I couldn't do anything even if I gave her kind words here.

I had finished with my apology so I went outside leaving Noelle in the room.

Luxion and Creare were waiting outside the room.

『Oh, master isn't going to hug and console her?』

『Master is really a sinful man. I totally respect you.』

Annoying Als.

「Say whatever you like. Rather than that, when are you going to return Creare?」

『I'll return soon. After all I'm also worried about overt here. I'll also have to check on how the bad children are doing.』

「Bad children?」

『Secret!』

What was she hiding?

I wanted to ask her but if Creare was going back then I wanted her to deliver letters souvenirs.

I also needed to prepare various things so I started walking. Luxion and Creare were also floating up and down alongside me.

Luxion talked to me about the case this time.

『About Loic, he really tried to erase master. He tried to do that only behind the scenes with nothing but underhanded tricks but, there is no doubt that he was a troublesome opponent.』

『That guy is really scary huh. His specs were pointlessly high. I wonder why the capture targets are all pointlessly capable.』

When I turned my gaze at the courtyard that was visible from this corridor, I saw Julius and others doing barbecue there.

Julius was standing alone in front of the grill and handed out meat skewers to everyone.

『Yeah, this is done. Jilk, take this.』

『No your highness. Your highness has been doing nothing but cooking since the beginning, so I'll take your place now.』

『I'm doing this because I like it. Don't mind it, just have fun.』

Those guys had helped a lot with infiltrating the venue, so I gave them a special bonus which they used for this barbecue.

It looked like they were having fun at the garden.

Marie was gulping down a mug of nicely chilled beer in one go.

『Kaaaah! It's seeping right inside me~』

What a hearty drinking style.

Even though her appearance was that of a teenage girl, she was drinking and eating like a middle-aged man.

Cara brought some skewered meats for Marie.

「Marie-sama, what a splendid drinking! Here, please eat this too! There are also a lot of meats! The vegetables too!」

「Muhohoho! This is the best! Cara, you eat a lot too. We'll stuff ourselves full while we can. We don't know when we'll be able to do this again after all.

「Yes Marie-sama!」

I wondered why it made me wanted to cry when I watched Marie and others.

My eyes were blurry that I couldn't see well.

Usually Kyle would be with Marie and Cara, but right now he had Yumeria-san hovering around him.

「Kyle! Look, I got us some meat skewers. Aa~n」

「I-I can eat by myself! Also Kaa-san, you're eating nothing but meat! You need to eat your vegetables too!」

He must not wanted other people to see them mother and son getting along closely, but Yumeria-san was dejected by the refusal.

Kyle wanted to console her mother who was like that, but he was unable to be honest with himself.

「Ah youth」

『Master too you know?』

I ignored Luxion's retort and looked at Cordelia-san who was looking troubled at the courtyard.

The reason she was troubled when looking around her was seeing how the noble youths who were highly acclaimed by everyone in the kingdom had ended up.

Jilk was placing his used skewers on a strange plate that had cracks on it.

Brad who was feeding pigeon and rabbit saw that and asked him.

「Jilk, that plate is just garbage isn't it?」

「How rude. Can't you understand how wonderful this plate is?」

「Now see here, I don't want to say it but, did you really succeed as an antique dealer? I can't help but feel suspicious.」

「—Brad-kun yourself, your claim that you were successful as a performer feels like a lie though? In the first place, your magic trick is unskillful.」

「It's fine even if it's unskillful. After all I received money for displaying my perfect existence with the magic as an extra.」

These guys, I was worried when I heard they were driven out from the mansion, but it looked like they were living strong out there.

The vitality that I felt from them was already at the level of cockroach.

But, all of them—their unique characteristic had grown even thicker now compared to before they were driven out.

Greg and Chris were also amazing.

Chris warned Greg when he saw his appearance.

「Greg, how about you wear some clothes?」

「Ah? I'm wearing some already.」

「What are you saying when you are just wearing a single speedo?」

「You are stupid huh, Chris. Look carefully! How's it, my pectoral muscle!」

Greg's skin when he made a pose glistened under the sun.

And then Chris who was warning Greg for his speedo appearance was also dressed in only a single loincloth.

「That's just an underwear! Also muscles aren't clothes!」

「You yourself are just wearing a single cloth!」

「Are you idiot? I'm also wearing a chest wrap.」

*That ain't it you guys,* I wanted to retort like that.

It couldn't be helped that Cordelia-san was looking troubled.

Cordelia-san who was in such state was talking with Julius.

When I looked at Julius who was working up sweat with a refreshing smile in front of the grill—it felt mysterious because he looked normal due to the other four being so terrible.

Originally Julius was the crown prince of Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

His position wouldn't allow him to do something like grilling meat.

「S-say, your highness.」

「What is it?」

「Why are you grilling meats since the start? Should I relief you?」

Julius took off the grill's net and shook off the scorched things that had gotten attached on it.

「Everyone asked me that, but I feel the calmest when doing this. Besides, my experience is overwhelmingly lacking to become a fully fledged meat skewer cook. I want to accumulate experience from this kind of moment.」

What an admirable attitude—not that.

Just now, what did he say?

Cordelia-san turned a cold look toward Julius.

「Your highness is still a prince of Hohlfahrt Kingdom, you won't be able to become something like a cook I believe?」

She made a calm retort.

Julius made the tongs opened and closed with clacking sounds while answering Cordelia-san.

「Don't you think it'll be good if there is at least one prince who mastered the way of grilling meat?」

「I don't think so.」

Cordelia-san answered instantly. Seeing her, I got the feeling that I would be able to get along well with this person.

As fellow person of common sense that is.

When I looked down at Marie and others from the window like this, it made felt a little bit absurd.

「Looks like those guys are having fun.」

Creare suggested to me to invite Noelle.

『Then how about master invite Noelle-chan and join them?』

「Stu~pid. It'll only make the atmosphere feel awkward even though they're having fun right now. More importantly, I need to prepare before you return. Come on, let's get going.」

I brought Luxion and Creare toward the harbor.

.

## **Part 2**

The barbecue ended at the evening.

A guest came at that timing. It was Marie who entertained the guest.

The guest was—Louise.

After she welcomed her in, Louise said that she had a business with Noelle so Marie brought her there.

But the atmosphere was awkward.

Marie wasn't close with Louise, and Noelle had bad relationship with Louise.

Besides, Noelle was depressed right now and wasn't lively at all.

(Could it be that big bro, is the type to run away when he think that it will become a bloodbath? He is always gone when there is an important scene, is it because he detected the danger? I guess not. That big bro has no such ability.)

Louise sighed while Marie was escaping from reality like that and approached Noelle.

And then she slapped her.

\*Slap-\* Such sound echoed inside the room, then Noelle got angry after a delay.

「W-what are you doing!」

Louise looked at Noelle and made a ridiculing smile.

「I got the desire to slap you because you are making this face of, *I'm so unfortunate boo hoo*. You're really an extravagant woman huh. I wonder if you know just how much Leon-kun was running around for your sake?」

「T-that's—it's because Leon is kind.」

「No one would go as far as picking a fight with Alzer just from mere kindness. Your head really is filled with flowers.」

Marie knew about the actual situation.

The reason Leon saved Noelle was for avoiding the danger to the world.

But, as for what Leon himself was actually thinking, she could only imagine it.

(This is big bro we are talking about, so surely he saved her thinking she is pitiful. Even then he can't answer the girl's feeling—he is really the worst since the past.)

In their previous life similar things also happened several times although in smaller scale.

Her big brother's romantic life was irritating so she didn't get involved but—well, he had been a dense big brother even when she thought back like this.

Louise approached Noelle until the distance when their nose touched each other.

「I hate you. I hate you for living carefreely without knowing anything. Even now you still haven't noticed just how happy you have it.」

「D-do you know just how much hardships we had gone through!? Everything was because of your house's fault!」

「Oh, is that so? You two could enroll into the academy easygoingly even though your house was destroyed, who do you think you need to thank for that? Are you seriously thinking that the background of you sisters could be completely hidden with just the effort of your retainers?」

Noelle averted her gaze from Louise.

「I—don't know anything about that. We were just told to enroll into the academy.」

Louise folded her arms.

「It was really a bothersome situation. —But, the person who is the most bothered is Leon-kun who saved you. Noelle, what are you going to do after this?」

Noelle looked down and shook her head.

「I still haven't decided. I haven't decided yet.」

「—Go back to the academy for a while. It looks like Oto-sama will also permit it. It seems that it'll also be fine even if you follow Leon-kun when he goes back to his country. It's also fine even if you stay behind though.」

「Eh?」

When Noelle lifted her face, Louise shrugged her shoulders.

「Do as you like, that's what I'm saying. Decide your future course before Leon-kun and others return home. I come here today to tell you that.」

When Louise left the room, Noelle was rooted on the spot.

But, it was Marie who was the most troubled.

(Why is the last boss and the villainess helping the main character!? Aaaaaa!! I don't get it at all!!!!!!)

Even though she wouldn't need to worry about anything if things were simpler—Marie held her head in her hands because she couldn't predict the future development.

.

## **Part 3**

Creare had returned—calm came back to the commonwealth around the middle of the second semester.

It was really chaotic in the commonwealth at the first semester and the summer vacation.

Because of that, the academy's events—the romance events if you said it in otome game terminology, they were all crushed.

That happened also because the six great nobles caused scandals in succession.

At the academy rooftop.

I gave half of the lunch bread that I purchased to Marie while talking with Lelia.

We were talking about what to do now.

But it didn't become a useful dialogue.

Lelia was complaining too today.

「What now! Really what now!? All the events are crushed even though a long vacation is going to arrive soon, this is completely unexpected!」

I agreed with what Lelia said.

I heard that when a girl was angry, it was pointless even if you replied logically.

It seemed it would be better if you agreed with her 「It's troublesome isn't it~」 in sympathy.

「That's right isn't it. It's troublesome isn't it~. Oi Marie! Don't eat them all!」

The brown paper bag that was filled with several small croissants was almost emptied.

Marie apologized.

「Hah!? S-sorry. I had my head full with eating.」

Lelia yelled angrily because the topic was diverted.

「It's the fault of you guys! Pierre is gone, Loic is also gone, Hughes too has his engagement cancelled, but he doesn't have any flag with big sis! Narcisse-sensei was rounded up to help his family and is gone from the academy, what are we going to do now!」

About Loic, he didn't come to the academy using injury as excuse.

As for Hughes, he ran away leaving Louise-san alone when the incident happened. Because of that their engagement was cancelled.

That was the reason at the surface, but the true reason was because Fernand betrayed Albergue-san.

And then the six great nobles that were in mayhem called Narcisse-sensei back and they moved around in confusion.

They were busy with things like dealing with other countries, or apologizing to the kingdom.

Lelia stood in front of us with her hands on her waist to emphasize that she was angry.

This girl, so she could act cute huh.

「Are you two listening to what I'm saying!?」

「I'm listening. In other words, you have no idea of how to deal with the last boss right?」

「That's right. Really what are we going to do now.」

While Lelia was holding her head in her hands, Luxion who had been keeping quiet until now while observing the situation showed himself.

Lelia went 「Hyah!」 in surprise, but Luxion ignored her.

『Ultimately there is no need to worry about the last boss. In the first place, what master and Marie are worrying about is the commonwealth's situation after the last boss is defeated.』

「Eh? After it's defeated?」

『I'm currently hastening my analysis of the sacred tree, but I have judged that it's possible to deal with it using the attack of my main body. What's important is how well we will be able to calm down the commonwealth after that happened.』

Lelia opened her eyes wide.

「Y-you can do something like that?」

『Yes. It's also possible for me to sink this land right away.』

Lelia grabbed my collar when she heard that dangerous talk.

「Hey, what is he saying!? What is he saying!? These guy's words are really scary! I got the feeling that he is saying something like sinking Alzer if things become hopeless though!」

It was incorrigible because it was the fact.

I didn't know how I should answer her—so I glossed it over by laughing.

「Fuhahaha!」

「Don't gloss it over! Gloss it over, wait, that means he really can do that!? Hey, can he really do that!? Or rather, this guy is going to do something like that!?!」

Luxion answered sincerely.

『That's only if the situation is really hopeless. I don't mind doing that right away, but master won't give me permission.』

I soothed down Lelia.

『That's how it is. If possible I want things to end up in the ideal state, I'll also help out to take care of the aftermath—anyway don't worry about the last boss. We will deal with it if things really become hopeless,.』

Marie nodded with a croissant in her mouth.

『Yeah. That's why don't worry.』

That was unsightly, I wished you would finish eating before speaking.

Leli let go of me and casted her gaze down.

『T-that means, this country will sink depending on your mood.』

『What a rude fellow. No way we are going to do something like that.』

Lelia wasn't really listening after that when we resumed talking.

Did I threaten her too much?

.

## **Part 4**

On the way home from the academy.

Lelia was walking totteringly.

She refused Emile's invitation to send her until home and walked back alone like this because she wanted to think alone.

(This is bad. That Luxion is even more dangerous than expected.  
That's right, that guy is a paid item that came out in the first game.  
It's not normal.)

The game balance of that otome game's first title was strange.

It was so unbalanced the players needed to buy paid item to clear it.

Among the paid items, the weapon called Luxion possessed an overwhelming ability.

(I don't know how to deal with something like that when it appears in reality. Depending on those guys' mood, even I might become collateral damage if I'm unlucky.)

When she thought about what Alzer had done to Leon until now, it wouldn't be strange for him to accumulate dissatisfaction.

She didn't know when that dissatisfaction would blow up.

In addition, it was the six great nobles that were meddling with Leon.

She had no way to stop them.

(This is like being told that there is an even more powerful enemy than the last boss.)

It felt like someone else was having life-and-death power over her.

She couldn't stay calm at all.

Besides, she also couldn't trust Leon.

After all he was that kind of human who did extreme things in order to take back Noelle.

Lelia was unbearably anxious.

(If it's like this then I need power that can oppose him—but, is there any weapon in Alzer than can oppose Luxion? It'll be possible if it's the same paid item but—I won't be able to collect something like that by myself.)

Unlike the academy of Hohlfahrt Kingdom, the academy of Alzer Commonwealth didn't teach the students the fundamental of being adventurer.

Lelia herself had very little knowledge about that. It was impossible for her to recover the item with her own strength.

(That's right. I know the location. After that, if I can just obtain it—)

The paid item of the second game that she hadn't collected until now.

While she was thinking of the method to collect the item, someone stood in front of Lelia.

That man had his shirt unbuttoned on the chest area in this cold.

His black hair was swept back. He had healthy looking tanned skin.

He was also tall. The muscles that were visible from the unbuttoned shirt were firm.

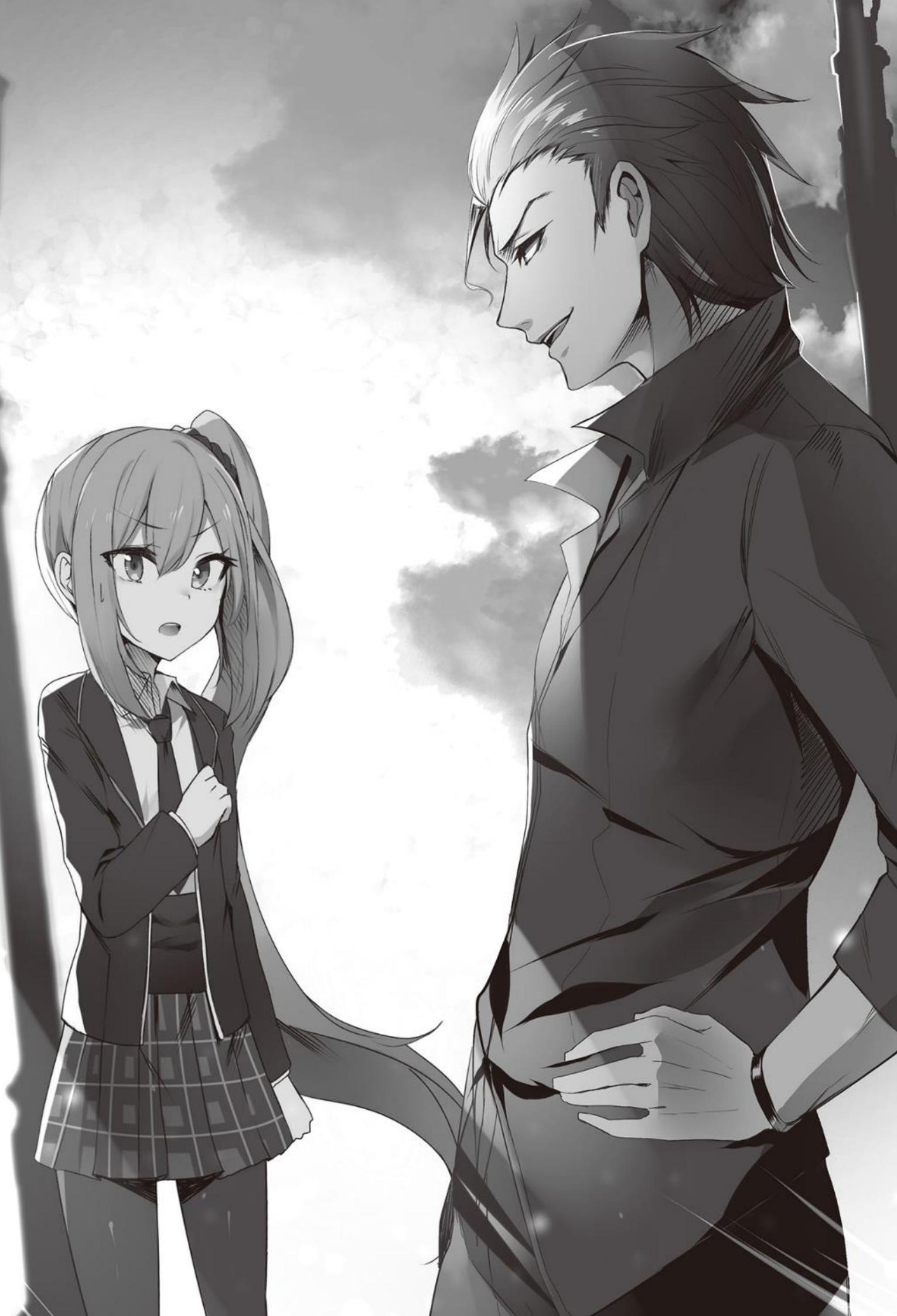
The man—Serge Sara Rault raised his hand and talked to Lelia amiably.

「Yo, long time no see Lelia!」

「—Serge.」

He was none other than the fifth capture target.

Although Lelia was surprised, she asked him where he had been going until now.



「Y-you, where had you been until now!」

「Are you worried? I'm happy. Oops, if you want to hear about my adventuring tale, do you want to eat together with me? It'll take a bit long after all. The adventure this time was just a bit tough you know. Really, how about we eat together? This is our reunion after so long after all, it's okay right?」

He had a really lighthearted attitude, but he was the heir of Rault House.

He was Albergue's adopted son.

This youth had quite a lot of rough spot in him, but he dreamed to be an adventurer—and also, he was a reliable boy as an adventurer.

Lelia gasped.

(That's right. If I ask for Serge's help)

Lelia accepted Serge's invitation.

「Fine. Let's go eat together.」

Serge was surprised.

「That's rare of you. I thought that you would refuse but—is it really alright?」

「What? We aren't going?」

「Stupid! Of course we are going! More importantly, what do you want to eat? It's a rare chance for us to eat together after all. Ask for anything!」

Lelia was relieved seeing Serge's delighted look.

(Thank god that Serge is interested with me.)

Lelia had dinner together with Serge that day.

## **Part 5**

Emile was waiting when Lelia returned home.

It seemed that he had prepared dinner.

「Lelia, about the dinner—」

「Sorry, I have eaten.」

「I-I see.」

「Sorry Emile.」

Pleven House had prepared a mansion near the academy for Lelia's sake.

It was nearer to the academy than her previous apartment. She was living together with Emile there.

There were also several servants there, but the mansion itself wasn't especially big.

Emile was thoughtful.

He could cook and clean, and above all else he was kind.

Lelia had no dissatisfaction with him.

But, she felt that something was lacking.

(Even though he can eat first without waiting for me. This made the atmosphere heavy.)

「Emile, about the next long vacation, I'm going to have a bit of business to take care. That's why, I won't be able to go back home with you.」

「Eh? Is that so? But, we have already promised.」

「Please. Don't ask me anything.」

(That guy is too dangerous. I have to obtain at least the same power no matter what.)

She would go out adventuring with Serge in order to prepare countermeasure against Leon.

She couldn't tell Emile about it.

And then it would also trouble her if she was asked to explain in detail.

Emile looked disappointed.

「I, I see. But, let's at least give a quick greeting to my family. My big brothers are also waiting, we also need to talk about the future.」

「—okay.」

Lelia said that and shut herself in her room.

.

## **Part 6**

Around the time the academy entered the long vacation.

A single airship entered Alzer's harbor.

It was Licorne with its characteristic white hull.

Livia walked down the ramp and waved her hand to Ange while her hand was carrying a large traveling bag.

「Ange, let's go quickly!」

Ange who was also carrying a bag as big as Livia's smiled seeing Livia like that.

「Leon won't run away even if we don't hurry.」

The two of them immediately departed to the commonwealth when the long vacation arrived.

They had taken care almost of all their businesses beforehand for this.

Livia had been looking forward to this day that she couldn't sleep last night.

「I want to surprise Leon-san quickly.」

「Got it. I also agree with that.」

It seemed Ange was also looking forward to this. She was smiling a lot since before they arrived at the commonwealth.

Previously—at the summer vacation, they were unable to sightsee a lot at the commonwealth.

This time they planned to sightsee leisurely.

Creare was watching the two.

『You two look like you're having fun. Over there they look like they will be really busy with work though.』

Ange turned her eyes toward another airship that came together with them from the kingdom.

『They will have a lot of work waiting for them after this.』

This time a lot of airships were visiting from the kingdom.

They also acted as Ange's guard, but the other ships were also boarded with the diplomats that were dispatched for the dialogue with the commonwealth.

Scandals with Pierre and Loic had happened in succession.

The kingdom too couldn't keep quiet with the case this time. They already had several talks before this.

Quite a lot of personnel were dispatched from the kingdom in order for the final adjustment of the agreement.

Livia said.

『Leon-san will be surprised this time.』

Ange also agreed.

『Yeah. Well, I too wanted to ask him a lot of things about what happened in Alzer even if I have to skip out my work. The information that came to the kingdom is few. Creare also won't talk.』

『Oh, are you criticizing me? There is a proper reason for this though~』

『Good grief.』

Ange was talking with a smiling face. But she frowned when she saw airships entering the harbor.

Livia tilted her head.

「What's the matter?」

「—Those are Rachelle's airship. There are a lot of them.」

The airships of Holy Kingdom Rachelle entered Alzer's harbor in great number.

.

## **Part 7**

The second semester was over and we entered a long vacation.

I—together with Noelle exited Marie's mansion.

The reason? It was Cordelia-san.

Cordelia-san's words 「Angelica-sama will worry if you keep living in Marie's mansion forever」 were reasonable after all.

When I returned to the house in Alzer that I used at the beginning, the inside of the room was covered in dust.

「Uwa~, this is awful.」

Cordelia-san rolled up her sleeves.

「We have to prioritize cleaning the bedrooms and the kitchen. Then, first let's open the window so fresh air can come in. We have to air the mattress.」

Yumeria-san also followed behind Cordelia-san.

Even though I told her it was alright if she stayed behind in Marie's mansion, she firmly refused because she was my maid and also watcher.

Watcher—it was good that she had the awareness of it, but it was no good if she said that to the person she ought to watch.

Good grief—this person is hopelessly cute.

The two of them headed to the second floor. Then Luxion saw the baby bed that had been left behind her.

I approached it.

「come to think of it, we brought this thing here.」

Noelle-chan—the pet dog that Jean kept was using this when we were taking care of it here. But now Noelle-chan was already gone so it was brought here because it wasn't used anymore.

Noelle was also looking nostalgic.

「This is the one that we were using before the summer vacation isn't it? I see, so it's placed here.」

The collar was still attached around Noelle's neck.

She decorated it herself when going to the academy to keep it out from view. Right now she had gone back to her bright personality just like before.

But she seemed lonely somewhere in her.

「You could still stay at Marie's mansion though? Is it alright for you to stay together with me?」

Noelle scratched her head when I asked her that.

「That's an unpleasant way of asking. Well, there is also this feeling of mine that want to stay there though. It's fun there every day, and Marie-chan is also kind.」

「Ee~, that girl is kind?」

「She is kind. But—you know, she has romantic relations with those five. Even if I don't intend it, I often caught them in the act.」

I tended to forget but, those five were Marie's lovers.

When living together with them, sometimes I would come across that kind of scene.

Noelle too seemed to take that into consideration.

「That girl seemed reluctant that Noelle is moving out though.」

She looked really depressed when she heard that Noelle, Cordelia-san, and Yumeria-san who had been helping with the housework would be leaving.

The number of servants in her place had also increased, even then they were still short of hands there.

In the first place that mansion was too large.

But there also wasn't any need to refuse if Noelle said that she wanted to come to my place.

「Well, it doesn't matter.」

Noelle joined her hands behind her back after I said that.

She looked shy.

「Hey, Leon—do you know about local wife?」

Noelle laughed shyly when I was unable to reply.

「I thought that perhaps, becoming one might be fine but, I wonder what Leon might think about it」

It was an attractive proposal for a man but, could Noelle become happy with that?

「You, are you alright with that? Are you really not going to regret it?」

Noelle's expression turned depressed.

「Sorry. As I thought it might be impossible. It was embarrassing to say that, and it makes me a bit sad.」

「Right? Our current distance will be better for both of us.」

More than friend, less than lover—further development than this was impossible.

Luxion who had been listening to our talk seemed to have been waiting for this timing to speak to Noelle.

『Is it alright for me to give a report?』

「W-what? Say it if you are here!」

Luxion looked at my left arm while Noelle was being surprised.

『I have found a way to take off the collar.』

Finally? I asked Luxion why it took so long.

「It took a lot of time for you huh.」

『I was taking my time in order to do it safely. The method to take it off itself didn't take long to discover, but I also investigated how to do it safely. Cutting it with the chain materialized will put the least burden to the body for taking it off.』

「Isn't that method too plain?」

It seemed Noelle also thought so.

「Then we should have cut it right away.」

『If we try to cut it carelessly, the collar will tighten—and take off the head. Physically.』

「—Hey, will it really be fine? Is that method really the safest method?」

Noelle was getting scared.

『Among the chain rings, there is just one of them that won't trigger the effect. The collar can be taken off after we destroy that. There is no problem because I have pinpointed its location.』

I looked at Noelle.

「Should we?」

「U~n, I'm scared, but—I'm thinking that perhaps it'll also be fine to just leave it like this.」

「Eh!？」

「B-because, this too is one of my few bonds with Leon.」

It was sweet when she said that but, I also wanted to be spared from the suspicion of having an abnormal hobby.

When those who were in the know of the cursed collar saw Noelle, they would immediately look at the bracelet on me and made an 「Uwah!」 face.

「No good. It's causing difficulty in our daily life so let's take it off.」

「—Leon you idiot.」

Luxion showed which part of the chain should be cut.

『It's the part near the collar. Master, you should pull the chain, then I will cut it with a tool.』

「Got it.」

I materialized the chain and stretched it tautly, but the part that should be cut was near Noelle's collar.

When I pulled it, it made felt strange for some reason.

There was also how Noelle closed her eyes nervously. It made my heart to pound hard strangely.

『Then, please wait while I prepare the tool. The tool is prepared at Einhorn, I will head there to retrieve it now.』

「You, say that beforehand!」

『Master is the one misunderstanding. Then, excuse me for now.』

Luxion went out from the window and heading to Einhorn. I and Noelle looked at each other and we snorted.

「Aa~, sorry. I misunderstood that this thing can be taken off right away.」

「It's fine. I also misunderstood like that. Even so, the feeling of the collar got stronger with the chain materialized like this.」

Noelle held the chain and made clinking sound with it. Certainly it made the obscene feel of it stronger.

「Certainly. It made me feel strange.」

Noelle went along with my joke.

「Leon you pervert.」

「What? Should I say *isn't it fine* here?」

I approached her while making lewd movement with my fingers. Noelle covered her chest with both hands and twisted away.

「What are you doing while the sun is still this high, stuuupid.」

Noelle was laughing happily.

A relationship where you can joke with each other is really important isn't it.

Then the room's door opened.

Cordelia-san was watching me with a cold gaze.

「—Leon-sama, what are you doing?」

「Eh? This is, it's just the usual joke.」

I tried to gloss it over with a laugh, but then the door opened fully and showed other people behind Cordelia-san.

Far behind was Yumeria-san who was trembling while holding the sapling's case—not that, the problem was the other two people there.

Over there was the smiling Livia—she was tilting her head with her hands joined together.

「Hee, so you two are always doing this kind of joke.」

「Li-Livia!」

There was also Ange with expressionless face.



「I'm also here. Even so, we didn't visit this house previously but—to think, there is a secret that you are hiding here. I never even imagined it.」

「Se-secret!? What do you mean secret—hah!」

Ange and Livia were sending their gazes toward the baby bed.

In a further stroke of bad luck, they saw Noelle's collar and my bracelet were linked by a chain.

Livia's smiling face was scary.

「Leon-san, you will give us explanation right?」

「T-this person here is—hah!」

I noticed another danger just when I was going to introduce Noelle.

I recalled a single fact.

It was at our first semester.

I took care of the dog that Jean kept because he was injured—that dog's name was “Noelle”.

And then the one here was also Noelle—I hadn't told them that the dog Noelle-chan had died.

I didn't tell them because I didn't want to worry them.

But now it became extremely bad.

Noelle introduced herself with a troubled look.

「I, I'm—Noelle. Noelle Beltre. I'm going to the same academy with Leon. E-eh? Did I introduce myself before this?」

The collared Noelle introduced herself like that.

It was a long time ago, so Noelle introduced herself for the second time but—it seemed her doing that was problematic.

It was like pouring oil into fire.

「We met before at Marie's mansion didn't we? Wait, Noelle—you say? I see, so that's how it is. How stupid of me, I didn't notice it before.」

When Ange started to chuckle, Cordelia-san straightened her back.

She was focusing to be a background so that she wouldn't stand out as a maid.

Stop! Don't escape by yourself!

Livia's misunderstanding was also accelerating.

「Noelle-chan—I heard that it was a seventeen years old female dog but, so that's how it is. I was misunderstanding.—So she is actually a human. I misunderstood her to be an old dog.」

「Y-you're mistaken! Noelle-chan the dog really existed!」

「I didn't know that Leon-san has that kind of hobby.」

Livia's face turned serious.

I couldn't stop sweating.

Ange's gaze was fixed to the baby bed.

「In that case this place, is your love nest with that Noelle-chan huh? I never even dreamed that your letter for us was written with your life with your mistress. Leon, you're really something.」

It sounded like a praise, but it wasn't.

Her eyes toward me looked like they were blazing with flame of indignation.

If I made even a single mistake, it felt like Ange would be enraged and blazed up for real.

Shit! I was feeling the chills.

Even if I tried to make an excuse, the situation was too bad.

Livia questioned Noelle.

「Noelle-san, we have met before haven't we? I have thought it's suspicious since that time. You have known that Leon-san have us as fiancées haven't you?」

Noelle who was questioned like that—apologized to Livia.

「I'm—sorry」

Wait! Don't apologize! First we need to dispel the misunderstanding here!

That's right. If Noelle said that this was a misunderstanding—if she said that, would the misunderstanding get cleared up?

When I looked at Cordelia-san, she averted her gaze from me.

Th-this woman, you are betraying me at this important time!? C-come to think of it, her gaze had been cold sometimes when looking at me!

I looked toward Yumeria-san to ask for help.

Yumeria-san was in panic with her mouth opening and closing with only 'awawawa' sound.

「T-that, Leon-sama kidnapped Noelle-san from a marriage ceremony! W-with that the two of them are close with each other, that!」

The panicking Yumeria-san was pouring even more oil into the fire.

No, it wasn't oil she was pouring but a bomb.

I was happy that she was trying to explain about the circumstance of me saving Noelle and other things to dispel the misunderstanding. I was happy but, unfortunately it was accelerating Ange and Livia's misunderstanding.

「He kidnapped a bride you said? Leon, you will tell me about it in more detail right? And about your hobby too, this is a good chance so let me hear all about it as your fiancée.」

「So Leon-san like Noelle-san that much. You have even prepared a baby bed.」

What's the meaning of this?

Why didn't the two of them know about what had been going on in Alzer?

Certainly my contact with them was only the minimum, but Creare should have returned to them.

Hadn't they heard about the situation from her?

And then I noticed one more fact.

—Why didn't Luxion tell me that the two of them were coming?

If it was him then he should have noticed.

And then, when I considered how he wasn't here at this timing—.

「Y-you set me up huh. You set me up huh, Luxion!!」

Ange and Livia brought their face close to me.

「Leon, I'll have you confess everything!」

「Leon-san, you will get an extra strict “Bad-!” this time!」

And then I noticed.

The scene that looked like me cheating from all angles.

The betrayal of the Als.

And then, all the misunderstandings that had been accumulating until now to create this extremely bad situation.

This—could it be perhaps, a checkmate for me!?

# **Epilogue**

.

## **Part 1**

『You set me up huh, Luxion!!』

Luxion was watching the projection of Leon screaming in the mansion.

『In the society, it's the guy's own fault if they got cornered into checkmate—those are master's own words. Now it can be applied on master himself splendidly.』

The place was Einhorn's deck.

He and Creare were facing each other there.

『You are also horrible.』

『Is that so?』

It was Luxion's instruction so that Creare didn't tell Ange and Livia about the detailed circumstance.

Why did he do something like that?

The cause was Leon.

『Well, it's fine. Because without this master might let go of the sacred tree's sapling. That thing is an extremely precious sample.』

Creare also agreed with securing the sapling.

『I agree with that opinion. But, it's really devilish to create this misunderstanding scene in order to force master to bring the precious sample home to the kingdom.』

『At this rate both master and Noelle will keep hiding their feeling to each other till the end. So this is fine. Master too will become happy, and we too will be able to obtain a precious sample.』

Luxion had shown the data to Creare.

It was the information that he investigated in the commonwealth.

He didn't report it to Leon but, the commonwealth—especially the sacred tree's origin was suspicious.

Even Luxion was unable to investigate it.

『It's also unusual for you to be unable to investigate it.』

『—A military base ruin of the old mankind. I have discovered the possibility that the sacred tree is existing on top of such place .』

『Oh, really? In that case there might be an ally of us there.』

『Yes. Also—the plant called the sacred tree is incomplete.』

『Nn~, I can somehow see it.』

Luxion and Creare's conversation was still in the stage of hypothesizing.

They were questioning whether the sacred tree might actually be a plant that was artificially created.

Creare was also very interested.

『A military base of old mankind nearby. And then a plant with its own will that grant divine protection to human—certainly it's hard to believe the plant as a natural occurrence.』

It was just too convenient. That was one reason of their suspicion.

『—But, what do you mean incomplete?』

Luxion answered Creare's question.

『About the reason of the sapling's withering, it's caused by the sacred tree not granting it the necessary magic element for it to grow. Even when a sapling appeared, it will immediately wither because the sacred tree is killing it.』

『That's certainly unnatural for a plant. Perhaps because it's long-lived, it's waiting for a strong sapling to appear?』

『When Loic and master fought, there is evidence of the sacred tree intentionally allying itself with Loic. It was as though it lent the strength in order to defeat master who is the sapling's guardian.』

Creare confirmed the data of that time.

『It wasn't because Loic used the oath to the sacred tree?』

『I didn't detect any reaction of that.』

The sacred tree brought immense benefit to Alzer, but it had defect as a living thing.

Its defect was how it wasn't multiplying.

Why did it become like this?

Both Luxion and Creare were still unable to find the answer.

Creare's interest was growing stronger.

『To absorb the magic element to grow—that's convenient for the old mankind. It decrease the density of magic element in the atmosphere. If that's the case, perhaps the sacred tree itself is a legacy of the old mankind?』

『It's unclear.』

In order to investigate that too, securing the sapling was a priority for them.

They also wanted to investigate its priestess Noelle.

For that it would be ideal to keep her at Leon's side.

『Are you making use of master?』

『Why do you think so?』

『You create an excessively absurd situation for the sake of investigating the sapling.』

『Is that so? If Ange know about the two's circumstance, the possibility of her inviting Noelle to the kingdom will increase. One of master's worries will also disappear. I think there is no problem with that though?』

『That master right now is right in the middle of bloodbath though?』

Leon was continuing to scream in the projection that was showing the going on in the house.

Leon was going through hardship right now where he was cornered without any place to escape.

『Luxion, I'll never forgive you bastard! Ah, wait. Both of you, this is a misunderstanding! It's not like I'm holding a grudge to Luxion for not helping me with hiding things. If it's those two, they should know about you two coming here beforehand—eh? If I know you two are coming, I'm going to hide the evidence? —N-no! Someone help! I don't care even if it's you Luxion, help!』

Creare who also got implied by Leon got offended and lost her will to go helping.

『Master is horrible! Hmph! You can get scolded for a little bit more.』

『Agreed. Master should reflect on himself a little.』

Seeing Leon getting scolded, Luxion and Creare looked like they were somewhat enjoying it.

After watching for a while, Creare asked about something that she was curious about.

『Ah, that's right. More importantly, have you managed to determine what happened behind the scene of that case?』

『There is still no proof, but I conclude that there is no doubt about it.』

What Creare was curious about was the reason of Rault House's victory against Lespinasse House.

How did Lespinasse House that should possess superior crest lose against the lower ranked Rault House?

Luxion was investigating the reason.

『I surmised that Lespinasse House—both their guardian and priestess lost their crest before Rault House destroyed them.』

.

## **Part 2**

In the palace of Hohlfahrt Kingdom.

Roland was facing his desk there. There were dark circles forming under his eyes.

He had fallen asleep before he noticed and there was a trace of drool on the paperwork.

Roland opened his eyes and rubbed his mouth.

And then his anger was welling up.

「That brat, every time every time!」

When he thought that the problem would finally get taken care of, the official that was dispatched to the commonwealth before the second semester started returned with a big ruckus.

The reason was 「Count Bartfalt picked a fight with Barriere House!」.

Speaking of Barriere House, it was a house with a large influence in the commonwealth right now.

The palace became like a beehive that was poked after receiving that report. Then another diplomat came right after that bringing a new notification.

It was an apology letter from Barriere House and the commonwealth.

Roland and others couldn't even imagine just what was going on over there.

But, there was one thing that they understood.

Roland held his head in his hands.

Leon's laughing face—his grinning face was surfacing in his mind.

It was a face that was mocking him.

Roland was getting continuously harassed by Leon.

「DAMMITTTTT!! That guy's smirk keep flashing in my head whether I'm sleeping or awake. Why do I have to be this troubled by a man. Unforgivable. Absolutely unforgivable.」

Had there ever been anyone who could torment him until this much before?

Roland was being tormented by Leon.

Even though he was at other country, he was still harassing him even now—Roland couldn't forgive him.

「I want to see that smirking mug turn into despair. What should I do? What can I do to harass that guy to the max?」

It wasn't enough to just promote him in rank.

Plus alpha—Roland put in extra effort to muster all his intellect with the wish of making Leon despaired.

「I'LL NEVER FORGIVE YOU BRATTTTT!! I'LL TAKE REVENGE AGAINST YOU NO MATTER WHATTTTT!!」

## **Afterword**

.

Thank you very much for buying the fifth volume!

This is the author Mishima Yomu.

The volume this time can be said as the second volume of commonwealth arc.

The main heroine of the fifth volume is undoubtedly Noelle, but I'm curious of the readers' impression toward those five.

Both Leon and Marie are overwhelmed by them after their uniqueness is strengthened even further.

Greg received the same treatment with Chris at the WN, but this time I made his character like that in this LN.

It'll make me happy if you readers can enjoy those five powering up even more than at the WN.

But, I want you readers to enjoy Noelle's character even more than that.

At the previous volume, even though she already made her appearance there she got overshadowed by Marie's active role.

Marie is really.....you know.

Why is she this popular?

Certainly she has some elements that it won't be so strange for her to get popular but, if you just count the fourth volume, her popularity is number one, overtaking even Leon.

Leon is number one in the whole, but Marie is number one if you only count the vote at fourth volume.

Marie didn't only outstrip the heroines, she even outstrip the main character and took the number one spot for a single volume—amazing.

The Marie route that is the reward for filling the questionnaire is also received well, I went 「!？」 when learning that.

I'm happy but.....is it fine like this?

Well, I only wrote the SS with the feeling of *it'll be good if the readers enjoy it.*

It's easy to write it anyway.

The SS this time also surpassed the level of mere bonus story just like last time, so I was impressed with myself for writing that much.

The reward for filling the questionnaire of volume 5 is also the continuation of Marie route, so it will pleases me if you readers can enjoy it.

I'm not writing about Noelle at all here.

I'll reflect and write about Noelle.

Noelle is really cute! Side ponytail the best!

—That's all.

I'll write the next volume with everything I have too, so please keep supporting this series too from here on.

# **Short Story - Marie Route The Third**

.

## **Part 1**

I obtained the freedom of school life. But at the same time I also obtained the binding that was engagement.

It's been a long time, this is Leon Fou Bartfalt(リオン・フォウ・バルトファルト).

I safely advanced to be a second year student, but there was a bit of problem.

「How does it feel after selling out your big brother?」

「It sounds bad if you call it selling. Even though I did my best while thinking of big bro's sake.」

「You're always so shameless! Do you understand the hardship that I'm going through!?」

The second son of our family, Nix(ニックス) who had safely (?) graduated marched into the student dormitory and forced me to listen to him speaking fondly of his lover.

Now he was a feudal lord noble of the newly formed Bartfalt House with the rank of count—ruling over the floating island that was once governed by Count Offley(オフリー).

The previous ruler Count Offley was found out to be working together with sky pirates and so his status was stripped away from him.

Well, it was me who crushed him though. That felt good.

Now then, because of that a territory without owner was formed, but it also couldn't be left alone like that.

It was also difficult to quickly find someone for managing a territory with a size at the level of a count house. Anyone would be troubled if they were asked to take such responsibility so suddenly.

Even the kingdom itself was troubled, and in the first place the kingdom had confiscated the assets of Offley House.

Only the territory remained. And that territory was a floating island with a tricky state.

There the kingdom decided to place a new feudal lord there.

I was the one who rendered a distinguished service in the case this time, but I was still a student.

And so the one who got selected for the position was my big brother Nix.

That sounded simple when I said it like that, but that was because I omitted just how many discussions there were that were carried out between the adults.

Because it was a long and boring story.

The kingdom also desired the territory of the count house, but more than that they wanted to grasp the territory of Marie(マリエ)'s family, the Rafan(ラーファン) viscount house that was located in the mainland.

Marie's house was also ended up crushed, but the territory of Rafan viscount house was located on the mainland.

Its value was different from a floating island.

The kingdom chose to put the territory on the mainland under their direct control rather than the floating island.

As the result, Nix ended up as the head of the count house.

「I—I! I didn't really study how to manage a territory in the academy! I also have no noble acquaintance of the same rank and age! Even though just establishing a new house is already really hard, I myself am a greenhorn. There's no way I can be a count!」

「That's what Dorethea( ドロテア)-san is for right? Ah, sorry, I mean Dorothea-onee-san<sup>sister-in-law</sup>.」

「That Dorothea is also too much for me!」

I introduced the house of Count Roseblade(ローズブレイド) to Nix in order to help him with his current situation.

It was a known prestigious family even among all the prestigious families in Hohlfahrt(ホルファート) Kingdom.

Their eldest daughter Dorethea-oneesan was someone with a slightly strong peculiarity, but she was a real beauty.

Nix was holding his head looking like he was at his wits' end.

「She would say things like wanting to tie me or wanting to get tied—I don't have that kind of hobby! I would be fine with a relaxed relationship like father and mother!」

「She is beautiful so it's fine isn't it? She also got big breasts.」

「I'm not going to choose my marriage partner based on the size of their breasts like you!」

I couldn't hold back myself at those words.

He said I'm choosing my marriage partner based on their breasts size?

I couldn't forgive that mistake even though he was my brother.

「Take those words back! Marie has no breast! Don't talk like I'm fixated with breasts size after I chose that Marie! Big or small, that's not the problem! There is no problem at all!」

The door's room opened while we brothers were arguing.

From there—the happy looking Dorothea-oneesan and—Marie whose face was like a Noh mask appeared.

Dorothea-oneesan was waving her hand at Nix with a smile.

「I found you honey. We came to the academy today to scout the third year students. It's not for you to play around with your little brother.」

I couldn't believe that Nix was called 'honey'.

I almost burst into laughter but I held it down. Nix's angry glare stabbed into me.

Dorothea-oneesan entered into the room and smiled toward me.

「Leon-kun, you mustn't bully honey.」

「I'm not bullying him. I'm just teasing him because he kept boasting about his love life.」

When I said that with a serious face, it seemed that my feeling went through.

Dorothea-oneesan slapped Nix's back.

「Oh honey, really! So you wanted to brag to Leon-kun.」

Nix's face that was looking at me was dreadful.

Rage, hatred—such emotions were blending in that face.

I couldn't help but making a similar expression to ask him whether I was really deserving to be looked at with such negative emotions.

Nothing would begin if I dealt with hatred using hatred.

I sent off Nix with a smile.

「Do your best big bro!」

Nix's hand was grabbed by Dorothea-oneesan and then he said to me with a small voice while getting dragged out.

「You're the only one who I absolutely won't forgive.」

—It felt like there was a genuine hatred in that voice, but surely it was just my imagination.

Because we brothers were intimate with each other.

Obviously he was just joking.

「Now honey, let's go. We need to scout six people at least.」

「—Yes.」

Dorothea-oneesan brought away Nix whose head was hanging down.

It felt like there was grief drifting from his back, but surely it was just my imagination.

Good grief, what was he so dissatisfied about from having such beautiful and big breasted wife? What's more she was really devoted to him.

—Well, if it was me I'd decline though.

When it was just the two of us inside the room, I looked at Marie who was standing there expressionlessly.

「And, what's your business here?」

Marie briskly walked toward me and then she kicked my butt.

It wasn't a girl's kick.

She launched a sharp kick like a martial artist.

「Ouch!」

No, it was really painful!? The pain resounded heavily until the core of my body.

This girl, wasn't her power uncommon even though her body was small!/?

Marie's face became like hannya.

「Whose breasts are you calling nonexistent!? You've never even seen my breasts before!」

Looks like she was seriously angry.

I was backing away against Marie's pressure.

「B-but it's true that you're—ah, I'm lying. If I'm asked whether you have them or not—perhaps you have them, a bit?」

「Don't be so obsessed with just some lumps of fat!」

「Woman's breasts are stuffed with dream and hope! —I'm sorry. I won't say anything more, so please don't make fighting stance like that. It's really painful so don't hit me.」

Marie was seriously starting to shadow boxing, so I surrendered.

This girl's fist was heavy. Very heavy.

Her punch could send even a man flying.

She had a might that would echo until your bone.

Marie clicked her tongue.

「Even though I'm tired from showing Onee-san<sup>sister-in-law</sup> around since the morning.」

「So it's you who brought Dorothea-oneesan to this room huh.」

「That's right. Even so, that person too—she is amazing as usual.」

「—Yeah. After all she is someone who did something like exchanging collar for real.」

I recalled the spring break.

The marriage ceremony of Nix and Dorothea-oneesan—was held with only kin attending it due to a strong wish from Roseblade House.

They also held public unveiling and marriage ceremony officially, but we were requested for an unofficial ceremony—a ceremony where only relatives were participating to be held no matter what.

The count house was begging at us even though our house's status was lower.

*Please, let us hold the unofficial marriage ceremony within just the family!* They asked.

The reason?

—Because Dorothea-oneesan wished to exchange collars instead of exchanging rings between the husband and wife.

She absolutely wouldn't give up that wish even when others told her to stop it.

Dorothea-san only reluctantly gave up when they said that they would hold an unofficial ceremony in exchange of her restraining herself in the official ceremony.

She said that she wanted their marriage to be one where they would tie each other—it was amazing.

Of course only relatives who knew the situation could participate in that ceremony.

Both Marie and me were put off.

It would be hard for Nix from here on.

「Rather than that, I think that her words of love toward Onii-san<sup>brother-in-law</sup> were too heavy. It doesn't matter even if we are reborn to be different people, I will find you so that we can be tied together again. That's heavy. It's feel too heavy for me especially knowing that reincarnation is real. —That person, perhaps she will really manage it?」

We were reincarnators.

Dorothea-oneesan's speech sounded strangely vivid to us and made us turned pale.

*It doesn't matter how many times you are reborn, I won't let you get away*—her words sounded like that.

Nix felt slightly pitiful when we thought that.

But this was something necessary.

I was forcing it a bit too much in order to save Marie, so to make up for it a sacrifice was necessary.

That sacrifice was Nix.

Well, even Nix himself became successful in life and even obtained a beautiful bride because of it so there was no problem.

This was a necessary sacrifice. And it also a really good offer for Nix.

It was a win-win.

This is a request from your cute little brother, so forgive me okay—Onii-chan.

「Then, you came to the male dormitory just to show Onee-san around?」

「Ah, that's not all. Is Luxion(ルクシオン) here?」

When Marie called, Luxion suddenly appeared from empty air.

He was hiding with optical camouflage.

『Do you call?』

I joined my hands behind my head.

「Your business isn't with me but with Luxion? What is it this time? If it's because you have used up all of your money again, should I ask this guy to prepare some counterfeit money for you?」

Luxion took my joke seriously.

『Please leave it to me. I shall prepare some paper money with even better quality than the real thing.』

*That'll be a completely different thing then,* but before I could say that Marie got angry.

「When did I ever ask for counterfeit money huh! How are you two usually seeing me!? That's not it, both of us are second years already! Y-you know, soon, there will be many events going on.」

「Aa~, events huh.」

The story in that otome game would start progressing for real from the second years.

The middle stage of the game mainly would be war with Fanoss(ファンオス) Principality.

Marie was concerned by that.

「Remember, the war in that otome game was really difficult wasn't it?」

「The developer was a demon. It was so hard I could feel the malice.」

Even thinking back now, it was a horrible game.

It was hard to even clear it without using paid item. The balance of the game was too weird.

Even though no one was looking for difficult battle gameplay from an otome game. Just what was the developer thinking?

「Right now things are going just like the scenario, but as expected I'm worried about the development from here on.」

If the main character Olivia(オリヴィア)-san lost—it would be game over.

That would be troubling for me too.

According to Marie, that otome game even had a sequel.

Olivia-san would also appear there. So we wished to avoid her dying.

Also it would feel unpleasant if an acquaintance died.

Luxion spoke while we were feeling troubled.

『I have always been thinking this when listening to the story of you two—is the situation going to be so terminal that they will send students into war?』

In the war with the principality, many students would also get involved in it including Olivia-san and his highness Julius(ユリウス).

And then they would also participate in the final decisive battle but—certainly, was Hohlfahrt Kingdom really alright as a country when they needed to recruit even the students for war?

Marie didn't really get it.

「What do you mean by terminal? They won the war at the end.」

I was exasperated by Marie's answer.

「You, didn't you learn at school—at the previous life? What kind of country would send even high school students into war?」

「Ah!？」

It seemed Marie understood it as mere knowledge, but she didn't really get it for real until now.

As a story, the great efforts of the youths would look beautiful.

There were also a lot of stories about the great efforts of students at our previous life.

But, when you thought about it realistically—didn't that mean that the adults of Hohlfahrt Kingdom were unreliable?

Even though they won the war, it was only just barely.

The postwar situation was too scary to think about.

「Th-then, the story of that game—is really bad isn't it!?」

Marie also got panicked, but let's first confirm the flow of the situation from the beginning.

First, before the principality declared war, the movement of the sky pirates inside the country was becoming more active.

While the army was busily moving around, the academy's students also encountered sky pirate in their extracurricular lesson.

There the students won.

After that, they learned the existence of Offley House that was manipulating the sky pirates behind the scene. The main character borrowed the strength of Julius and other capture targets and repulsed the enemy.

However it came to light that Fanoss Principality was behind this. The students became involved even deeper with the war.

Fanoss Principality made use of Count Offley to destroy Hohlfahrt Kingdom from within.

The problem here was Offley house that I defeated when rescuing Marie before this.

I defeated that house.

And then the sky pirates—were also defeated by me.

I crushed the important factors that were related with the second year events.

That was why the events also got crushed.

〔Now there is no more air pirate rampaging within the country. The Offley House is also gone.〕

Marie also agreed with my statement and looked uneasy about the future.

〔That's the situation. What's left, is only Fanoss Principality that was acting behind the scene. But, they will start moving for real at the third year.〕

In that case, we would get busy when we were third year.

We would start preparing from now—just when our thought reached to that point, Luxion spoke in exasperation toward us.

〔If the mastermind is already clear, then won't it be better to deal with them ahead of time?〕

〔—Not a bad idea.〕

It didn't feel right to take action against the principality that wasn't doing anything at the present stage, but I wouldn't hesitate to act if it was for the sake of my peace of mind.

Marie clapped her hands and made an expression of someone who got a flash of idea.

〔Yeah! If we defeat Fanoss Principality ahead of time then the war also won't happen!〕

『Yes. Then, I'll immediately—sink down the territory of Fanoss Principality.』

Marie froze at Luxion's statement.

I warned him for his joke that wasn't reading the mood.

『Read the mood more, you annihilation maniac bastard. That doesn't sound like a joke.』

『I'm serious though?』

『Eh?』

『It will remove any potential future trouble if the whole country is sunken down.』

T-this guy, he's really a dangerous AI.

The idea of sinking the whole country in order to avoid war was crazy.

『Idiot! Why do we have to commit genocide huh! Countless people are going to die if the principality's floating island got sunken down!』

『I won't be troubled no matter how many new mankind die. Rather it's going to be a weigh off my shoulder.』

This guy is really—.

『This is an order. Don't sink down any floating island.』

『—Roger.』

This damn AI, he replied with a reluctant tone.

『We're going to avoid war as peacefully as possible. With that in mind—it'll be important to make the principality want to avoid war.』

Fanoss Principality's objective was to sink the continent where the kingdom existed into the sea.

They possessed the trump card to make that into reality.

If we stole or destroyed it first—the principality would lose their trump card and became unable to achieve their objective.

Marie looked relieved while I was thinking about from here on.

「It's reassuring that you're holding Luxion's leash tightly. If the wrong person got him, they might get cajoled by this guy instead and make a great mess.」

『New mankind will never become my master. If such situation occur, I will self-explode.』

「You're extreme. Setting that aside, recently the atmosphere of the academy is bad isn't it?」

Marie looked relieved knowing that we would manage the war somehow. I made a small talk with her.

「Atmosphere? Ah, because the girls are feeling scared right now.」

The atmosphere of the academy had changed since the end of the first year.

His highness Julius and other capture targets made the girls who bullied Olivia-san got expulsed.

It didn't end there. The students who were involved got punished regardless of the degree of their involvement.

The five capture targets were competing with each other to find the involved students and asked them to be punished. A lot of noble sons and daughters got driven out from the academy.

In the end, even students who were speaking ill about Olivia-san behind her back because of her commoner status would get found

out and condemned by the five—the atmosphere of the academy was the worst.

Certainly in the game there was also a development of the students who bullied Olivia-san getting punished.

But I didn't think it would go this far.

However, thinking carefully this was also a natural progression.

The five capture targets were people who would shoulder this country in the future.

Anyone who drew the ire of those five—not only they would get expulsion, their life would also be over.

—In the game, the punishment of the students who bullied the main character only got mentioned briefly in passing, but it was this graphic in reality.

And then the problem was Olivia-san who had captured the heart of those five.

「I rarely caught sight of Olivia-san recently, but I wonder if she is doing alright? I'm worried that those students will resent her because of this situation, and perhaps the person herself is also troubled by this situation? Those five too, I wish they would be more considerate to their surrounding. Recently the atmosphere is turning gloomy. It's uncomfortable here.」

When I caught sight of Olivia-san previously, I got the impression that she was a honest and kind girl.

Marie pouted slightly seeing me feeling concern for Olivia-san.

「You know, I heard that Olivia is sneaking away from the academy sometimes. Also, it's not just Olivia and those five's fault that the atmosphere in the academy is bad.」

「Eh?」

「It's Angelica(アンジェリカ). The girls who got cornered by his highness and others sought help from Angelica. Because of that the relationship between his highness and Angelica also turned bad. The tension between students is rising. Well, it's unrelated with us students of low standing though.]

Was Angelica-san covering for the cornered students?

It seemed that she got into confrontation with those five because of that.

Well, she was Olivia-san's enemy in the game, so of course they would be in confrontation but—it was complicated when seeing it in reality.

Here she looked like she was protecting the cornered students.

Besides, Angelica-san's had her position as a young lady of duke house—she had the role as the leader of the students.

Perhaps it couldn't be helped that the people around her were relying on her?

Although it wasn't something that was directly affecting mobs like us.

We couldn't get close to Angelica-san, we also couldn't get close to Olivia-san who was protected by those five.

His highness and the others were on guard. They wouldn't let anyone whether man or woman got near Olivia-san.

If the story was progressing well then we also didn't have any reason to get closer, so we wouldn't.

As the result, now we were only listening to the rumors from afar at best.

Even so, game and reality were really different from each other huh.

「Well, we'll just worry about dealing with the principality somehow.」

The story was at least progressing well, so I switched my feeling to think that it would be fine if we just gave some support as necessary later.

Marie put her hands on her waist and sighed.

「I thought I would be able to watch the story unfold from nearby, but this is the reality of the situation. We can only listen to the rumors even though we are in the same academy.」

「This is just fine for mobs like us. It's too presumptuous to think that we'll be able to get involved with the main casts.」

「You don't sound like you're speaking your true feeling though? Besides, we got involved before this.」

「That was only because of an emergency.」

Luxion apparently didn't like my wording.

〔That's what they called being indecisive.〕

.

## **Part 2**

In a corridor of the academy.

Few people were passing through here at the evening.

Julius and Olivia were walking together there happily.

The two had just returned from outside the academy. They were talking excitedly about today.

「Julius really like meat skewer.」

Julius replied to the smiling Olivia with a bright smile.

「I like it! It's simplicity is great, but even more than that it's the best how it doesn't care of manner. Even so Olivia, you also looked like you enjoyed it.」

「I prefer a slightly informal setting when having meal rather than a stiff and formal one.」

「Me too. The palace is too fastidious about a lot of things. There are too many pointless things because they're putting empathize to the ceremony and the etiquette too much.」

Julius felt like everything of him was accepted when he was together with Olivia.

She wouldn't nag him with things like how it wasn't appropriate for a prince.

Besides it was fun being together with her.

「Olivia, if you don't mind—」

*Stay together with me forever,* Julius was about to continue with that, but from the corridor ahead Angelica came with a quick pace and talked to him.

Her expression was grave. Julius was fed up seeing that expression.

It spoiled his pleasant mood.

「Your highness! Just what are you thinking, expelling the daughter of Count Neville like that!」

Seeing Angelica's expression that was becoming even sterner day by day, it made Julius realized that his feeling toward her had completely cooled down.

Recently he was thinking unpleasant thought about Angelica even more than before.

He unconsciously stood in front of Olivia to protect her and narrowed his eyes.

「That girl spoke ill about Olivia behind her back. She even gathered some students and planned to ambush her at night wasn't she?」

Angelica was protecting such female student.

「Can't you overlook it as a joke!? Certainly, I admit that she went too far. But, she just needs to be reprimanded, how does it become a talk about expulsion? Besides when I asked her there is nothing about this ambush planning! She came crying to me about her innocence!」

Angelica's argument was irritating.

Julius decided that she was just accepting the excuse of a noble daughter without questioning it and he silently let out his anger.

「Reprimand you say? Angelica, is it as I thought that you're looking down on commoner? Besides, are you seriously telling me to accept the situation just by listening on one side's argument?」

「Wh-what are you—」

Julius became convinced when he saw Angelica getting flustered.

When he turned to look at Olivia behind him, she was scared against Angelica.

She was casting her eyes down sorrowfully with her shoulders hunched down.

That act stimulated his desire to protect her. It stirred up Julius's heart.

「Julius, it's alright. Even if the like of me am killed, the noble's reaction will be like this at most. But, even so—if I can just stay at Julius's side」

Angelica got enraged by the pitiful look that Angelica showed.

「You! What kind of lie have you told his highness! You deceived his highness's heart—」

Julius's hand stopped Angelica who was trying to question Olivia.

「Stop!」

「Y-your highness? Why. Why won't you listen to me!? Count Neville is enraged by the matter this time. He even proclaimed to father that he is leaving his highness's faction. Count Neville is an important member in your highness's fa—」

「Enough already.」

「—Eh?」

Julius was fed up.

His pleasant mood until just now had been spoiled. He took Olivia's hand and started walking while ignoring Angelica.

「Your highness!」

Angelica called out to him, but Julius didn't even turn toward her and spoke.

「I don't care about factional dispute between nobles! Don't drag Olivia into something like that.」

Angelica bit her lower lip and looked down.

「—Why won't your highness understand, that faction will be indispensable for your highness's rule」

.

## Part 3

「Ahahaha! It's really refreshing to make that girl who has the blood of Hohlfahrt flowing inside her looking frustrated like that!」

In a small mansion that was built near the student dormitory.

It was the exclusive lodging house for Olivia.

It was something that Julius and others prepared for her. Although it was small, the construction was solid and the furniture was also extravagant.

Olivia was taking a bath inside that mansion.

She was washing her body thoroughly.

「It's nice to have flesh and blood like this. It makes the feeling of interacting with the world more real.」

It had been a long time since she had a flesh body.

The female grudge that was once called the saint had stolen Olivia's body.

But, the body's condition would sometimes turn bad.

Her arm was numb and wouldn't move.

「It'll still take time until I'm fully adapting to this body.」

Her right hand was moving to grab her neck.

That was the resistance of Olivia whose body was hijacked.

「Olivia—you're still resisting? You're a strong child. But, I have been waiting for this time for all this time. I'll have you go along with this until I accomplished Liiā(リーア) and my revenge.」

The right arm was gradually stopping to move. Olivia stood up.

「—Now then, the progress with breaking up Julius faction is going well. The talk with this country's traitors is also advancing nicely. I'll let them play around for a bit more.」

Olivia looked up to the ceiling and smiled mysteriously.

「Now then, I guess I'll play an act.」

## **Part 4**

At the palace of Fanoss Principality.

We were sneaking into the palace that was lacking a king deep at night, sneaking into the treasure warehouse.

「Which one is the magic flute?」

Magic flute—it was the key item that summoned the last boss in the first and third game.

It wasn't an item that the main character possessed, so its function was unknown, but it would materialize monsters when the princesses of the principality played it. They also could control those monsters.

It was the extremely troublesome trump card of the principality.

Marie was sneaking in together with me, but her eyes were sparkling seeing the treasures inside the warehouse.

「Look at that Leon! This accessory is amazing. I wonder how much it will sold for?」

Seeing the numerous accessories that were fitting for princess to wear, she was thinking of how much they would sell rather than how she would look wearing them.

Even though just a little while ago she was a woman who yearned to be a princess and aimed to marry rich and powerful men.

「Don't steal them okay?」

「I won't! More importantly, I'm amazed we can sneak in this easily.」

The reason for that was Luxion.

Luxion who was monitoring the surrounding answered Marie's question.

『After master heard about “that otome game’s sequels”, he finally ordered me to investigate the neighboring countries after this late. The area that needed to be investigated is vast and it took a lot of time, but it’s easy to obtain simple information like how to sneak into a palace.』

「You really can do anything.」

『Yes. After all I’m outstanding.』

「—You’re really overconfident.」

『I’m only stating the fact. The items that seem to be the magic flutes are always stored separately. The one here is only one of the two.』

There were two magic flutes that could summon last boss.

I thought there was only one magic flute. I didn’t know that Heltrude(ヘルトルーデ) had a sister.

I was shocked when I heard from Marie that game had sequels.

There was no way we could just ignore this, so I had Luxion investigating.

Marie found a flute that was placed on the most extravagant stand.

「I found it! This must be it! I think the flute has this kind of shape!」

『Ah, that one is a fake.』

「Eh?」

『The real thing is hidden. The mechanism is this way—』

Marie and I moved the mechanism inside the treasure warehouse and found the magic flute.

「Found it.」

「To think they prepared a fake. They're really cautious.」

We found a black and thorny flute and reached toward it.

However Luxion got in the way.

『Please don't reach out so carelessly. There is another mechanism. If that mechanism is triggered, a trap that prevents the flute from getting taken away will activate.』

「What a strict security.」

We deactivated the mechanism and collected the magic flute. Even so, this flute really looked ominous.

Marie tilted her head while looking at the magic flute.

「What're we going to do with this?」

It would be safer to destroy it but—we didn't know what would happen after we destroyed it.

If we destroyed it carelessly, the sealed giant monster was liberated! What were we going to do if it had that kind of development? It was scary, so we decided to bring back the magic flute.

「Let's take it home and have Luxion research it.」

「Hm~. Ah, that's right. You also researched the saint's necklace before this right? What happened with it?」

The saint's necklace that I obtained was apparently possessed by some kind of suspicious existence.

Luxion caught it and he was in the middle of researching it right now.

『It's actually an interesting existence, so I'm still continuing to research it even now. Well then, just in case please store that magic flute in this case. It won't be able to taken out so easily if it's put in here.』

We put the magic flute inside an attaché case and started moving.

There were soldiers and knights patrolling inside the palace.

But, the route that they were patrolling—the area where the security was light.

Luxion was monitoring them all in real time, so we arrived to the next destination without encountering any enemy.

That place—was the bedroom of the second princess, Hertrauuda(ヘルトラウダ).

There were knights standing guard in front of her room.

I aimed a handgun with silencer attached at those knights.

「Sleep for a bit. It'll end soon.」

\*Pshew\*, such sound sounded out several times.

The knights that were shot moved their hands toward their weapon in surprise due to the sudden pain—but their eyes rolled back and then they collapsed.

Luxion hurried me up.

『There is only thirty minutes until the next shift of knights come. Please hurry.』

I understood that but—.

「It feels a bit awkward to enter a girl's room. Marie, you go inside.」

「Haa!? Why do I have to do something so dangerous? You go inside!」

—I entered inside her highness Hertrauuda's room with Marie pulling my hand.

There were several females inside, but I immediately made them fall asleep with the tranquilizer gun.

Luxion immediately scanned the inside of the room.

『Found it.』

He moved the mechanism inside the room. Then the picture that was hanged on the wall slid aside and a safe appeared.

Marie approached the safe before looking at Luxion.

「What's the password?」

『The dial over there is a fake. The way to open it is—』

We followed Luxion's instruction and opened the safe. Then Marie took out the magic flute from inside.

「Second flute get~!」

Marie said that with a small voice and put the magic flute inside a second case.

With this the principality had lost their trump card. We had surely taken a big step toward avoiding the war.

We looked at each other's face before moving to escape immediately—.

「Who? Father? Mother?」

—His highness Hertrauuda woke up.

I immediately aimed the tranquilizer gun toward her highness, but Marie stopped me.

「Stupid! She is still a kid!」

「You're the idiot!」

Fortunately we were dressed in all black.

We were also hiding our face.

But it was bad that our figure was seen.

Our voice was also heard.

His highness Hertrauuda was gradually waking up before I could have her fall asleep again.

Her eyes snapped open seeing the wall opened and the maids lying on the floor.

「Wh-who send the two of—」

She was about to yell, so Marie immediately covered her mouth.

「Hey, your voice is too loud! People would come!」

She talked loudly for that you know?

While I was thinking about what to do now, Luxion talked to me with a small voice.

『I've made it so that no sound will come out of this room. Master, if you want to settle this peacefully—』

「—Haa? Is it alright doing that?」

『Yes.』

I listened to Luxion's advice and felt a bit worried if it would be really alright to do as he said but—there was no time to hesitate so I followed his advice.

The princess had long and straight black hair, and strong-willed red eyes.

She was almost as tall as Marie, but the difference between them wasn't just their hair and eye color.

Even though she should be younger than Marie, her breasts were more splendid than Marie's.

Growth was really cruel.

I kept the tranquilizer gun pointed at her as a threat while approaching her highness Hertrauuda.

Her highness had tears in her eyes, but she was glaring at me.

「Oi, take off your hand.」

「I-is it alright?」

「There is something I got to tell her.」

When Marie took off her hand, her highness Hertrauuda screamed.

「Thief! Isn't there anyone outside!?」

Nobody came no matter how loud she yelled.

Her highness calmed down slightly after realizing that.

「—Looks like the soldiers outside are defeated.」

「They were really weak. The soldiers of the principality are really low quality.」

Her highness glared fiercely at me. I told her a hint that was close to the truth.

「We're taking the magic flute. With this the principality has lost their trump card against the kingdom.」

「—Looks like it.」

She averted her gaze from me.

She must be feeling relieved that there was still one more magic flute.

「We have also taken away the one in the treasure warehouse. Not the exaggeratedly decorated fake, we have found the real one that was hidden.」

Her shoulders moved just slightly.

It looked like I managed to shaken her.

Marie watched our exchange attentively.

「Are you mortified?」

「Not really. Just kill me if you want to kill me. But, you will surely receive the retribution for this.」

「—What a pitiful child. You don't even notice that you're just an ignorant puppet whose string is manipulated by others.」

「What did you say?」

「If you want to know the truth then ask the old man in charge of the library. Tell him you want to learn the true history. Ask that old man and not anyone else. You two have many enemies inside this palace.」

I led Marie outside the room while keeping my gun trained on her.

And then I broke out into a run at full speed after the door was closed.

Marie also followed close behind me.

「Wait, what were you talking about there!? I never hear anything about it!」

「I also don't know anything! I only said that because Luxion told me to!」

『If Hertrauuda take action with this, then master will get a step closer toward the peaceful slow life that master mentioned.』

「Is that really true!? I don't want to do this kind of phantom thief play anymore you know!?」

We desperately ran and got on the airbike that was hidden at the palace's courtyard before making our escape.

## Part 5

The next day.

Government officials were rushing into Hertrauda's room.

The officials who were specialized in investigation used magic and tool to search for any trace of the intruders.

But they didn't find anything and were at their wits' end.

「Just who in the world infiltrated here?」

「Is it the kingdom?」

「No one noticed the infiltration, not the knights or the maids—」

Rauda was watching that going on. Beside her was Count Garrett(ゲラット).

He was gently twirling the moustache he was proud of, but the attitude he showed to Hertrauda was harsh.

「Your highness, this is a great blunder. To think that you couldn't do anything except watching the magic flute getting stolen.」

「—I have no excuse.」

「Naturally. The magic flutes are this country's treasure. Your highnesses are qualified to be the successor only because you two have the aptitude for the magic flutes. And yet those magic flutes are stolen. Do you know what will happen now?」

This man, even though he was a retainer but he was acting really haughty.

He didn't have any respect toward the royal family.

Hertrude(ヘルトルーデ) couldn't bear watching Garrett's attitude and approached.

「Are you saying that there is something Rauda can do against someone who the knights were helpless against? Garrett, let Hertrauda rest already.」

Garrett looked dissatisfied.

「I can't do that. We have to gather information about these thieves immediately. Her highness Hertrauda is the only witness of this theft. She can rest after the investigation is finished.」

「Garrett!」

Hertrude was enraged. It was there a huge man arrived.

When that man who was past middle-aged and wearing armor came, Garrett showed a timid attitude.

「I-isn't this black knight-dono.」

「Her highness Hertrauda is tired. She need rest, is there any problem with that?」

「Eh? —Y-yes! Of course there isn't.」

Pressured by the black knight, Garrett reluctantly withdrew.

Rauda recalled the words of the intruders after seeing this.

(There are enemies inside this place, huh.)

Rauda headed to the library that evening in order to investigate, just in case.

(With this commotion, perhaps I can even give the knights who usually guarded me a slip.)

.

## **Part 6**

Rauda made use of the commotion to become alone. She followed what the intruders said and talked to the old man in charge of the library. She told him that she wanted to know the truth.

The old man looked surprised. At first he refused.

But when Rauda asked her the second time, he said 「Originally I was ordered to dispose of them」 and brought several books to her.

Those were very old books.

Rauda was surprised after reading them.

「—What is this」

Written in those books was the history between the kingdom and the principality.

It told her something different from what she knew.

Even though until now she had been taught that the kingdom was the root of all evil, the history book wrote that the cause was actually the principality.

The old man spoke to the shocked Rauda.

「After the late king and queen died, I was given the order to destroy these books. But these books have historical value, so I can't bring myself to carry out that order.」

Rauda was trembling.

「Th-this is the fact? Are you saying that this is a fact!？」

The old man nodded.

「It's also a fact that the kingdom attacked us twenty years ago. But, before that the principality was also rampaging in the kingdom doing the same thing—」

Raida was flustered because it was different from what she was told until now.

「Why. Why weren't we told this!」

「—Your highness, forgive me.」

The old man kneeled and shed tears.

「Right after both of you were born, the late king and queen who were in the peace faction were assassinated by the nobles of the pro-war faction.」

「Assa, sination?」

After that the old man talked about the open secret of the principality.

The royal family at that time was thinking to broker peace with the kingdom.

The pro-war faction was enraged by that. They assassinated the king and the queen.

The left behind princesses were used by the pro-war faction as their puppets. That was the current situation.

Rauda fell on her knees and laughed while crying.

「This is stupid! Then, we are actually—w-wait. Then, what about Bandel(バンデル)? What about Onee-sama's guard Bandel? Those who approached us are the pro-war faction who betrayed Otou-sama and Okaa-sama isn't it!?」

The old man told her with a pained look.

「Bandel-dono is—not involved with the assassination. But, he is an authority within the pro-war faction since the past. I don't believe, that he doesn't know.」

Raida didn't know what to believe in anymore.



## Part 7

I and Marie returned from Fanoss Principality. We came to the research room that was inside Luxion's main body.

The analysis of the magic flutes was carried out there.

『It's surprising. This is a tool that was created after the old civilization was destroyed.』

「What does that mean? It's not a tool from your era?」

『Yes. I believe that there were several civilizations between our civilization and the current civilization where master is living in. This item came from one of those civilizations in between.』

Marie was looking at the magic flute while listening to our conversation.

「I get it now but, what's so surprising about it?」

『That civilization finished a tool to control the monsters. I believe this tool make the monsters obey by forming magical contract with them. The catalyst used for that is the soul of the user.』

「Eh!？」

Marie was shocked. She stepped away from the flute.

I also quietly took a step back.

It couldn't be helped, a tool that handled the soul was just scary.

「Let's destroy it right away.」

『It's useful so let's destroy it after analyzing it. But please rest assured. The user's soul won't be taken away just by ordering around the small fry monsters. At best the user will only feel tired mentally. But, the artificially created monster that is sealed by this magic flute is a different matter.』

The magic flute was sealing a giant monster. By using the flute the user could freely summon it.

What was troublesome was that even if that giant mobster was defeated, it could be summoned again right away.

『It's not accurate to call it sealing. This magic flute is preserving the data that become the base of the giant monster. The user will use their soul to gather the magic element in the surrounding area and materialize the monster.』

Marie didn't really get it, so she wanted to destroy it right away.

「That's troublesome. So this flute can't be destroyed?」

『No, if it's destroyed then it will break without any bad effect to the surrounding area. But the magic and science technology used to create this flute is valuable so I wish to continue analyzing it.』

I didn't mind that as long as it wouldn't bring any trouble.

「Just destroy it properly later.」

『Of course.』

Inside the research room there were also various other tools or creatures stored. It seemed Luxion gathered them here.

There were even monsters among them.

But even among them, there was one thing that was stored with specially rigorous containment—it was a black shadow that was sealed inside a spherical glass.

The shadow had female silhouette, but it looked like it was struggling violently.

「And, what is this thing?」

Marie also became curious when I pointed at it.

「This woman, it feels like I have seen her somewhere—I'm not sure.」

『It's the existence that was possessing the necklace. It's an astral body.』

Isn't that something like ghost or specter?

It was the first time I saw a real one after getting reincarnated into this fantasy world.

But, it wasn't scary when seeing one imprisoned like this.

「So this thing was possessing the saint's necklace. What is it saying? It looks like it's struggling violently.」

『Its voice is cut off from reaching outside. I made it so that it can't see outside from inside there. It's making ruckus asking to be let out from there and won't answer my question at all—so I keep experimenting on it.』

Marie clung on my hand.

「Leon, I think I'm actually more scared against Luxion rather than the ghost.」

「What a coincidence. I also feel the same.」

『What rude people. I won't harm mankind.』

This guy, he had the nerve to lie.

「Don't lie. You tried to kill me when we first met!」

『—That was an unfortunate miscalculation.』

Really, this guy.

While I was thinking that, Marie noticed even more problem with Luxion.

「Wait a second. The mankind that he said refer to the old mankind isn't it? This guy, is he perhaps not considering anyone else other than us as human?」

When I and Marie turned our gaze at Luxion—he averted his red eye.

『Now then, master and Marie are here, so let's try conversing with this ghost. Perhaps we will learn something.』

Don't avoid the topic! I wanted to say that, but the ghost became able to see us and yelled loudly.

『Kill! I'LL KILL YOU ALLLLL!!』

Because the voice was too loud, Luxion lowered the sound's volume.

『Don't be so noisy. I brought Marie here just like you asked. Please show me a different reaction.』

When Luxion said that, two red eyes appeared on the black shadow.

It saw Marie and tried to leap at her—but the glass blocked it and it couldn't approach further.

『Found you. I found you, Marieee! You who descended from my bloodline. HAND OVER YOUR BODY TO MEEEEEEE!』

The thing it said was too horrible.

Besides, its appearance was also really scary.

It looked like a real evil spirit.

But Marie was laughing scornfully at it because it was imprisoned.

「This thing really look like a fierce animal in zoo. In the first place, isn't it just unreasonable asking someone else to hand over their body like that? Luxion, exterminate this thing.」

『I guess. I have also finished analyzing it. I judged that there won't be any problem with that.』

The evil spirit howled in response to the two's conversation.

『You're calling yourself my descendant like that!? Don't you hate it, THIS HOHLFAHRTTTTT!! I'll throw the descendants of those shitty bastards into hell, I am Liia's—Li.....ia's.....?』

The evil spirit turned its gaze toward me.

Its red sharp gaze turned round when it saw me.

「O, oi, what is it. Why are you looking at me? Eh, could it be I'm cursed?」

When I was about to back away in fear, the evil spirit swelled up and struggled even more violently.

『Liia—LIIAAAAAA!!』

「Gyaaaaa!!」

The intensity of the evil spirit that was trying to approach me—it was really scary it made me wanted to cry.

The spherical glass started cracking, so walls came down to isolate the evil spirit.

「Aa~, it was scary.」

Marie was chuckling seeing me like that.

「What's that, even though you're a man. That's pathetic.」

「No, that was scary wasn't it!? Ghost is just plain scary even for a man!」

「Hah! There are things even scarier than ghost in this world. Reality is far more scarier.」

It looked like there were things even scarier than ghost for Marie who had gone through a harsh life in her previous life.

I criticized Luxion's blunder in order to hide my fear of ghost.

「Oi, manage that thing properly. What're you going to do if it escape?」

『What astonishing power. Even so, it looked like it was reacting to master. Why does it react more intensely with master even though Marie who it kept asking for is here? Besides, it was yelling Liia after seeing master.』

「How can I know! Aa~, it was scary. I'll go home for today and sleep.」

Let's finish my business in the bathroom quickly and then go to sleep fully covered in blanket.

Marie made fun of me.

「Could it be you're scared? Like, you won't be able to go to toilet at midnight? Leon, you're cute~. Do you want to sleep together with me?」

This girl, how dare she made fun of me!

「I'm telling you I'm not scared!」

「You look childish to get worked up like that.」

—Th-this girl, she was acting haughty just because she wasn't scared.

Even so—the saint's key item was cursed. Wasn't this something dangerous?

Should I make Luxion investigate it?

「Luxion, I have a little request.」

『What could it be?』

「I want you to investigate the saint's items.」

『—It's possible but, I'll have to postpone it due to my current resource and priority matter. I'm currently investigating this planet. My main body will also travel to the opposite side for a while, so I'll have to ask for a bit of more time for the investigation.』

I made him investigated too many things. The amount of work that Luxion could do was reaching the limit.

『I'm also concerned about other countries. —But this matter is also important. Investigate it for me.』

『—Understood. I will hurry as fast as I can.』

His voice sounded a bit protesting, but was it just my imagination?

.

## **Part 8**

Inside the spherical glass.

The first generation saint's grudge that was trapped inside looked like it was sitting down.

「There is no doubt about it. That's Liia. How—why?」

The grudge was weeping. It recalled how her descendant was standing beside him.

「I see. He is together with that girl—Marie. I see—」

Its wish that didn't come true during its lifetime had gone past eras and came to reality in this era.

「Liia, I.....I wanted to live and be together with you.」

The grudge kept crying and stayed obediently inside the glass like that.

.

## Part 9

Night.

Olivia went out of the academy at night taking Julius and Jilk(ジルク) with her.

「Both of you, thank you for accompanying me shopping.」

Oliva smiled at them. The two of them got embarrassed.

「Don't mind it. Just this much is nothing.」

「Yes, that's right. Both his highness and I will always make time for Olivia-san no matter what.」

The two of them were foster brothers—they were raised together since they were little and got along very well with each other.

But they were conversing like rival in front of Olivia.

「Thank you. But, didn't you have a plan Jilk?」

Olivia was toying with these two.

She aimed at the timing when Jilk had a plan to invite him to go shopping.

But Jilk didn't show any sign of noticing it.

「I don't mind. It's not an important business anyway.」

Jilk smiled. Julius sulked slightly seeing that and criticized him a bit.

「Not an important business, huh. Certainly, talking with your fiancée must be just something trivial for you.」

「Your highness. You don't need to say something like that in front of Olivia-san.」

「How many times it has been with this? You should take time to be with her already.」

「Does your highness mean that I should refuse Olivia-san's invitation then? Unfortunately right now I'm just a student. I don't want to be tied down by a family matter here, so I'll do as I want.」

This plan that Jilk abandoned was a meeting with his fiancée Claris(クラリス).

Claris was concerned with the situation in the academy recently. She had asked Jilk to meet and talk several times saying that she had something important to talk about.

Olivia—invited Jilk every time that talk was going to be held and went out of the academy.

And then Jilk was moving exactly as Olivia expected him to do.

(So his awareness is only to this degree even after ignoring his worried fiancée several times. Even though there is no guarantee the other side will feel the same like what you expect them to do.)

Olivia knew that the woman called Claris had strong feeling.

She genuinely loved Jilk.

Olivia planned to tear the two of them apart, but Jilk himself didn't love Claris from the beginning.

Only that point was extremely disappointing.

The three were intentionally walking on a street with few passerby.

They were walking in this kind of place because Olivia invited the two of them saying that this was a shortcut.

(Now then, it's about time I guess.)

Olivia showed a smile while feeling around the presences of the surrounding area—and she found reactions just like she expected.

Men wearing hooded robe appeared with weapon in hand.

They appeared from both sides of the alley to pincer the three. Then they drew out their weapons.

Julius and Jilk immediately took position to protect Olivia.

「Who are you guys!」

Julius shouted, but the men weren't perturbed.

Jilk took out a handgun from his chest holster and pointed it at the men.

Then the gazes peeking out from the men's mask turned grave.

Olivia was convinced.

(See, they're baited.)

One man yelled angrily at Olivia as the representative of the men.

「You—witch!」

The men attacked the three with weapons in hands.

Jilk also shot them with his handgun, but the enemies were too many and surrounding them. It was a difficult situation.

Besides the enemy tried to kill them, they were suicide soldiers—they seemed intent to throw away their own life.

Even when they were attacked, they would not care and kept attacking.

They didn't fear getting shot and headed toward the three.

「These guys, just who the hell are they!?」

Julius was also shocked by their abnormality. Even Jilk was losing his calm.

「Your highness, I'll cut open a path to escape! Please escape together with Olivia-san then!」

「No way I can do that! The three of us are going to survive this together!」

Olivia made her eyes moistened at this show of beautiful friendship.

「Both of you—do your best!」

Inside her mind she felt like she was going to puke.

(So Marmoreal(マーモリア) will always be Hohlfahrt's flunky no matter how many generations passed. They really give me the creeps.)

Then a laughing voice came from the rooftop.

「Stop there you villains!」

A man in white suit and black mantel jumped down from above.

He was wearing a mask. His identity was unknown.

Even Olivia was surprised by his entrance.

「—Wh-who!?」

The masked man greeted Olivia with his back turned toward her.

「I shall offer my assistance in the name of justice. You can call me—masked knight.」

Jilk was wary toward the man who appeared out of nowhere. Even so he expressed his thanks to him for his assistance.

「Thank you. Your highness, people will come soon with this much ruckus. Let's endure this for a bit more.」

But Julius alone was showing a conflicted look.

「Y-yeah, you're right.」

They fought the attackers for a bit more, and then it was just as Jilk said.

The soldiers who heard the commotion were running this way immediately.

「—We're retreating.」

The attackers withdrew from their leader's words.

Then the soldiers chased after the attackers—several soldiers pinned down the masked knight.

「L-let go! Why are you catching me!?」

The soldiers answered seriously.

「Of course we will capture a man who wear a strange mask while loitering around at night! You must be those guys' comrade!」

「W-wrong! I'm the masked knight! S-stop. Don't twist my arm!」

Olivia was losing her composure inside her heart seeing that scene.

(Who is this guy? Is he getting in the way of my plan?)

Then Julius talked to the soldiers.

「—That man saved us. I'm sorry, but let him go. I shall give my guarantee that he isn't a bad guy.」

「Your highness!? U-understood.」

The soldiers were bewildered, but they released the masked knight.

The masked knight fixed his ruffled outfit.

「T-thank you. I shall take my leave with this.」

He walked normally when going back.

Jilk was confused when he saw Julius watching the masked knight's back with a complicated look.

「Is he your highness's acquaintance?」

But Julius strongly denied that.

「N-no! A-anyway, I'm glad that you two are unharmed. More importantly, just who were those people who attacked us?」

Those people attacked them with strong determination.

Furthermore they weren't just night burglar.

It was a trained group. Both Julius and Jilk also noticed that the opponents had training with martial art.

Olivia asked the two whether they were injured with a worried tone.

「Both of you, forget about that. More importantly are you two injured!? When I think that the two of you might get injured from protecting me, my heart can't bear it—」

Olivia acted like a weak girl and made an appeal with her concerned question.

「No problem. How about you Jilk?」

「I'm more worried about your highness rather than myself.」

「—Big talk coming from you.」

The two of them were competing to act cool in front of Olivia.

Olivia watched them while pondering about the masked knight.

(Masked knight he said? What nonsense, he really did something unnecessary.)

Olivia harbored an anxiety that she couldn't express against the existence who suddenly appeared to save them.

(But, there is no change of plan.)

Olivia incited Julius and Jilk who were still arguing even now.

「B-both of you. Actually, I might know something about those men.  
」

Julius and Jilk stopped arguing when they heard that and started to emit anger.

They were angry toward the enemies who attacked Olivia.

(—Now, show me whether you will still cover for them this time too, Angelica.)

.

## Part 10

The next morning.

Angelica who received the report met with Claris, a third year.

The place was a parlor inside the academy.

But there were knights standing guard at the entrance. The window was also blocked with improvised iron bars.

Claris was imprisoned there.

「—Really, just why does it turn out like this?」

Angelica was standing in front of Claris with her hands clenched.

Claris was sitting on the chair opposite of her. There were dark circles under her eyes.

She looked thinner than before. Her hair was also not groomed.

Eyes that looked terribly cloudy looked up at Angelica from between the messy hair.

「It was me who gave the order. My followers were only following my order.」

「You are still giving that excuse even in front of me? Claris, your followers had confessed that they attacked on their own initiative without telling you. They're giving testimony that you aren't involved at all.」

Large drops of tears spilled Claris's eyes.

「They are really stupid. Did they think I'd be happy by doing something like this? —Why, didn't they tell me」

Angelica felt sympathy in front of the crying Claris.

(Even that Claris is cornered until like this.)

Usually she was the type who never stopped smiling while playing various schemes behind the scene.

But, she also had strong compassion.

The boys who were her followers were really looking up to her.

Those followers of Claris—attacked Olivia and others.

Claris earnestly requested at Angelica.

「It's over for me and also for those boys. Hey, Angelica—please let me talk with Jilk for the last time.」

Angelica shook her head powerlessly.

「It seems he doesn't want to meet with the culprit. If there is something that you want to tell him, I'll tell him in your place.」

Claris started laughing with shaking shoulders.

「Is that so? Then please do. I'll never forgive Jilk. I'll be waiting for you in the bottom of hell. Can you tell him that for me? Whether it's Jilk, or his highness—and then, that woman too, I hope all of them fall into hell! To be tricked by that kind of woman—why. Why, won't he listen to me?」

Claris yelled with a loud voice. After that she continued laughing while crying and couldn't be talked with.

Angelica held back her tears while looking at Claris who was in that state.

(—I can't cover for Claris. —Why am I so powerless like this. Can I do nothing except watch this going on?)

.

## Part 11

The atmosphere of the academy was strange since the morning.

The tense atmosphere these days was still as usual, but now even the teachers were moving around busily.

All the classes also became self-study.

Then the academy got temporarily closed at the afternoon.

I visited master to ask what was going on. He ended up treating me to tea.

The scent of tea drifting inside the room brought me happiness.

But, I ended up hearing an unpleasant story in there.

「—The daughter of the prime minister might get executed?」

Master was looking outside the window.

「Do you know about prime minister Barnard(バーナード)? Count Attlee(アトリー)’s house has served as the prime minister for generations. But it seems he will lose his job due to the case this time. No, it’ll still be a light punishment if he only lost his job.」

Nobility was a hereditary system. There was also the tendency for a post to be inherited for generations.

For the capital nobles who didn’t have territory, their post was the same like the territory that feudal lord noble would protect with their life.

To lose that would become a great loss for them.

「—What has the prime minister’s daughter done?」

Master made a troubled look.

「Her followers attacked his highness Julius and others.」

「No way!?」

What kind of meaning such act carried—even I who was estranged from politic immediately understood just how bad it was.

It was unthinkable that the daughter of the prime minister wasn't aware of that.

「According to the report of the investigators that the palace dispatched, it was a foolish act that was driven by jealousy. Those involved also admitted it.」

—They did a really stupid thing.

Attacking his highness Julius, the crown prince. Doing something like that meant their end as noble.

The possibility of Attlee House getting destroyed might be high.

Would the head of the house forced to take responsibility?

It was even possible that the house would become extinct.

But—there was also this development in that otome game.

The detail about the attackers wasn't explained at length, but I never thought that the culprit would be the daughter of the prime minister.

「Girl's jealousy is scary.」

Master shook his head at my muttering that was mixed with a sigh.

「Clarice isn't a short tempered woman. It must be the students who are her follower taking rash action.」

「—Just what are her followers thinking? Didn't they consider that what they did would bother their master?」

They must be trying to protect their master, but thanks to that she got cornered instead.

It was something that also happened in the game, but it wasn't funny at all when it happened in real life.

When I played the game I also thought that these guys were idiot.

But, master—didn't blame the students who did the attack.

「I felt something disquieting in the air.」

「Is that so? Isn't this case just some idiots running wild without thinking?」

「Mister Leon, do you think they couldn't even imagine that it would result like this?」

「—Even I can imagine it, so I think they had thought about it.」

I wondered just what master was trying to say. Then Master told me.

「I wonder, if perhaps there is somebody instigating them. Well, this is just the nonsense of an etiquette instructor who is powerless even in this academy.」

Master had this air that was different from the other teachers.

He was in charge of the etiquette class so he was often looked down at, but there was a rumor that master's court rank was high.

He was a mysterious teacher with peculiar air in this academy.

It seemed that he was kept out of the loop of the case this time because of that.

「It's suspicious. Master, after saying all that, do you perhaps have some kind of request to me? If it's something that I can do then ask me anything.」

Master made a troubled laugh. And then his expression turned serious.

「Then, I have a request for Mister Leon. Can I ask you to guard the attackers?」

「Guarding, the attackers?」

I was asked to protect the attackers. What a strange request.

That feeling must have come out on my face.

Master folded his arms.

「The investigators pulled out of this case without even doing a thorough investigation. Only few teachers are allowed to meet with the attackers. I cannot approach them at all. —For someone who is aiming to be a gentleman, it's really pathetic to admit this but, I'm lacking strength for this matter. But I can't overlook this case no matter what.」

「Master is really fixated with this case. Is there some kind of reason?」

「—Perhaps, you can say that it's for my atonement.」

Master didn't say anything more than that about his reason.

But, this was a request from master.

「Understood. Please leave it to me. I'm still not quite there in the matter of tea, but I'm a bit confident in regard to rough matter.」

「Mister Leon, isn't it an undervaluation to call the capability to destroy a count house as a bit?」

Did master mean the case of Offley House and Raffan House getting destroyed?

I wasn't even that serious when taking care of them though.

.

## Part 12

『And so, we're going to rescue the attackers? Master's policy always changes at the drop of a hat. You are the type of person that no one will want to have as superior.』

「Luxion, you're really pitiful to have such person as your superior. —Just be ready, I'll work you like a slave forever after all.」

『It will be interesting to see whether master will really be able to overuse me. But, I don't think that master will be able to fully make use of my capability with your shut-in tendency.』

「Spare me from any occasion where I'll need your full power. Well, I who can leave a scary weapon like you unused must be like the savior of this world.」

『That's a funny joke. Though it won't be funny at all if someone like master is the savior.』

「—Then, why did you say it's funny?」

『It's sarcasm.』

We arrived at the palace's dungeon while I was complaining.

The boys who attacked his highness Julius and others were imprisoned there.

It was a damp place that gave an unpleasant feeling.

I never wanted to ever have to stay here.

「Seniors, are you all doing well there~?」

I greeted with a light tone while my fingers were playing around with a key.

The boys raised their faces. A senior with large body stood up from among them.

His neck was really thick.

Come to think of it, this was the third year who entered the top ranking in the airbike race last year.

The other boys were on their guard against me.

「You are—Bartfalt? You got famous for some time.」

「Right now I'm just one of those boring masses though. —Well, I came to help you guys because of various things.」

「To help?」

The seniors looked at each other.

「—You don't come here to silence us?」

He asked me again with a very surprised look.

「Silencing you?」

「That's right. No one would listen to us no matter how much we pleaded.」

Beside me Luxion told me that there was no time.

『Master, your master can only us buy a little bit more time. Let's talk more after getting out of here.』

「Guess so. We've got to save the princess too while we're at it.」

The senior grabbed at the bars when he heard that.

\*Clang\*, such sound echoed in the dungeon.

「Princess? D-do you mean, Claris-ojousama!?!」

「That's right. I'll save her so please work with me okay?」

「G-got it. If it's something that we can do then we'll do anything!」

I immediately let out the seniors from the prison and made them changed into the clothes that I brought.

Fortunately the guard seemed to be master's pupil and overlooked our escape after master talked to him beforehand.

Even so, just who was master?

It was amazing that he had some clout with the guard.

.

## **Part 13**

On a path within a forest.

Clarice was transported in a horse carriage with both her hands handcuffed.

There was an armed female knight with her inside the carriage.

She was giving the strong impression that she would call her if she showed any suspicious movement.

The woman seemed to come from a house of knight peerage. She was talking to Clarice who was going to die after this with a malicious smile on her lips.

「You have a really shallow thinking for the young lady of a noted family like Attlee House. To think that you would attack the crown prince like that, you are a disgrace to the nobles.」

Clarice kept looking down without saying anything back.

The female knight drew out her sword and pressed its tip on Clarice's neck.

「Should I lop off your head right here? Everyone will believe it if I say that you suddenly started acting violently.」

The female knight was irritated that Clarice wasn't shaken by her threat and sheathed her sword back.

「Hmph!」

She must be intending to have fun tormenting Clarice until they arrived at the destination.

Clarice got a bad premonition that the palace would assign this kind of person to be her guard.

But, at this point of time she didn't have any more energy to be bothered about it.

(—The quality of the soldiers around me is also really low.)

The soldiers were walking slovenly. They were also talking with each other a lot.

Their superior officer didn't scold them. Instead he even joined their talk.

They were just a mere escort.

It could also be said that Clarice didn't have that much value. That this was the best treatment she could expect.

However, it was strange.

(This is, could it be—)

The carriage shook at the same time when Clarice reached the answer.

「W-what!？」

The female knight rushed out in panic. She found the soldiers lying on the ground there.

They were blown away by magic attack and died instantly.

The female knight screamed 「Hih!」 seeing that sight and looked around her with a pale face.

People who looked like bandits appeared around her.

(Bandits? Would bandit use magic? —No, these guys aren't bandit.)

Their movement was unthinkable for mere bandits.

They accomplished their respective task without even making any commotion.

They finished off the soldiers that ran away and then they headed toward the carriage.

The female knight unsheathed her sword but she was trembling.

In Hohlfahrt Kingdom, knights of the same gender were prepared for the sake of matters that concerned noble ladies.

The number of female knight was few, and most of them only put importance on appearance for ceremonial event and the like. Because of that they weren't that strong.

「D-DON'T COME HEREEEE!」

The female knight got scared and ran away. The bandits chased after her.

Then a scream came from some distance away in that direction.

Clarice got scared and trembled. She thought it was really laughable how she was trembling like this even though she had resolved herself for her death.

(So I still—want to live.)

She had given up with a lot of things, but it looked like her body was still trying to survive.

But, there was no more time.

The person who seemed to be the bandit leader reached out at the carriage's door.

He looked at Clarice's face, and then he grabbed her arm and dragged her outside roughly.

The bandits who gathered around the carriage were all calm.

Clarice was thrown on the ground. She lifted up her head.

「Y-you all, aren't bandits aren't you?」

They had the presence like trained soldiers.

They were carrying guns, but it bothered her that they weren't using them.

But, the bandits in front of her eyes didn't say anything.

They confirmed that she was really Clarice. Then after some exchange of gaze, a man carrying an axe stepped forward.

It looked like they would cut off Clarice's head.

(Aa, this is it. —Good grief, what an unpleasant way to end.)

Surely her followers were also getting silenced right about now.

Clarice was really frustrated that she was going to vanish like this without being able to do anything.

Then a gunshot resounded from inside the forest.

The arm of the man with axe was shot. He let go of the axe he was carrying.

And then the bandits pulled out the guns they kept hidden in their pocket and raised their guard against the surrounding.

「Over there, go.」

Several people went into the forest after the bandit leader ordered them to.

The remaining bandits stayed on where they were with their guard raised toward the surrounding.

Only the bandit leader pushed his handgun on Clarice's head. He was about to pull the trigger.

Then she heard some quarreling voices and another gunshot resounded.

All the handguns in the possession of the bandits were shot. The arm of the bandit leader was also shot.

From the forest, the male students who were Clarice's followers came out.

They were carrying rifles on their hands.

「Ojou-samaa!」

「Y-you guys」

Clarice was relieved with the appearance of her followers.

There was one boy who she wasn't familiar with among them.

「Good afternoon, die—is what I want to say, but there are things I want to ask you guys. Surrender without any fuss.」

The unfamiliar male student was holding a rifle at the ready.

The bandits looked at each other—and then they bit the back of their teeth.

All of them fell down one after another on the ground after that.

Clarice saw the men foaming on the mouth with their eyes rolled back.

「They are thorough with even poison kept in their mouth.」

The unfamiliar student was directing his rifle's muzzle toward the collapsed bandits.

「Can I ask you seniors to keep Clarice-senpai safe?」

「Got it!」

The unfamiliar student was taking control of this place.

A metallic spherical object was floating beside him.

『—Master, I succeeded in capturing the bandits hiding at the surrounding.』

「I wish we can capture them all though. —We failed.」

『The opponents are experienced. It would be dangerous if we let our guard down. Please don't get out to the front if you're wavering. You'll only be in the way.』

『I love to get in your way so no thanks. —Besides, I want to see various things with my own eyes.』

After Clarice's handcuff was taken off, she approached the unfamiliar student.

『Yosh, everyone is secured with this. My bad but, I'll have to ask all of you to hide for a while.』

Clarice massaged her wrist while asking the unfamiliar student.

『Hide? More importantly, just who are—』

『Let's save the talk for later. Ah, the hiding place will be in a nice location. After all it has a hot spring there. Well—you can also say that it has nothing but hot spring though.』

Claris couldn't accept that suggestion.

『I thank you for your help. But I will only trouble my family if I run away like this. I can't run away anymore.』

She couldn't give anyone even more trouble than this.

If she wasn't careful, perhaps even her family might get executed.

The unfamiliar student leaned his rifle on his shoulder.

『Master will take care about that so please don't worry.』

『Master?』

『—Come on, we're going.』

The unfamiliar student looked up to the sky. There an airship was floating.

The small airship descended on the forest.

Clarice's followers forcefully dragged her inside.

「W-wait, you all!」

「I'm sorry, Ojou-sama. But, please do as Bartfalt say here! We will atone for our sin on our own later.」

The small airship that Clarice boarded immediately left that place.

## **Part 14**

Inside a room in the palace.

Olivia and Marquis Frampton(フランプトン) were inside the room.

Marquis Frampton was a hook nosed man who looked older than his actual age.

That man was annoyed.

Olivia made an exaggerated sigh seeing him like that.

「—You are unexpectedly useless.」

Marquis Frampton flared up hearing that.

One of them was an adult, the other one was a young girl.

But, there was something between the two that made the difference of age unnoticeable.

「D-don't screw around! I've just lost one of my pieces!」

The enraged Marquis Frampton hit the glass on the table.

It made his hand became covered in blood, but he paid it no attention.

「They couldn't kill one little girl and even let the imprisoned men got away—you are acting really big for someone who only possess a piece of that level. —I'm impressed.」

「Guh! —B-but, with this the opposing faction and the nobles who have been an eyesore until now are gone. After all that Vince(ヴィンス) has no more nobles that he can rely on and that nuisance Attlee is now gone from the palace.」

Olivia—was joining hand with Marquis Frampton.

He was the opposition of Redgrave(レッドグレイブ)  
House—Angelica's family. He was the man who was leading the  
second biggest faction in the kingdom.

His ambition was strong and he thought of himself as a clever  
person.

(Is this man thinking of himself as a wise man even though he only  
has a little bit of cunning? Well, there won't be any problem as long  
as he keeps dancing on the palm of my hand.)

Marquis Frampton looked at the shining bracelet on Olivia's arm.

「More importantly, you're really the saint right?」

「Oh? I should have shown you the proof.」

「How can I trust you with just a single bracelet! —Go to the shrine  
right away and show me that you can use the saint's staff. If you do  
that, even I—」

He must be anxious after losing one of his pieces.

Olivia lifted up her left hand and filled the inside of the room with  
white light that was emitted from the bracelet.

Marquis Frampton lost his sight and groaned.

「Y-you fool! Don't make such bright light so suddenly! —It hurt my  
eyes.」

「Look at your hand.」

「What?」

His hand that was wounded all over until just now was only dirty  
with blood now.

When he wiped his hand, the wounds had been closed cleanly.

「—So this is the saint's magic.」

She instantly healed his wounds and without any pain at all.

Just with that Marquis Frampton was convinced that Olivia was the saint.

Although the saint's bracelet was also one reason why he believed her.

In the worst case he would trick the saint and made use of all she worth.

(If Redgrave House becomes Julius's backer, you will lose your position. You have no choice but to rely on me.)

Dispute would always exist in the palace no matter the era.

Olivia only laughed at that.

(Even so, this is concerning. The private soldiers that Marquis Frampton gathered were defeated this easily—is there an enemy who is aware of our movement?)

The imprisoned male students escaped from the dungeon.

But there were rumors 「They already committed suicide」 or 「They were disposed of」 circulating around.

It was the same with Claris.

A rumor that her carriage was attacked by bandits and she died was circulating.

And that was even though there wasn't any proof at all about it.

There were also a lot of nobles who interpreted the rumor to their own conveniences.

They thought that surely the students and Clarice were disposed of by someone before they became a problem.

But, there was a reason why they couldn't be allowed to stay at large—it was because Marquis Frampton was the culprit who instigated the boys.

He talked to them, telling them that Olivia was a witch, that she was aiming to overthrow the kingdom.

He told them—that she was seducing Julius and the other boys, that the kingdom was in danger.

The one telling them those things was a marquis, a pillar of the country.

Clarice's follower thought that their master would also meet danger, so they took action.

(Human can be easily tricked no matter the era. —Truth will always get twisted. It was also like that at that time.)

Olivia moved on to the next topic.

「Marquis Frampton.」

「What is it?」

「It's a miscalculation that Clarice and her followers managed to escape, but even if they appear again later, we will be able to crush their testimony. Rather than that, the principality is more important right now. How is it going in that regard?」

Marquis Frampton kept watching his healed hand while talking about that matter in irritation.

「Those cowards of the principality, they got cold feet. They told me to wait for a bit more before they attack.」

Olivia slightly raised her eyebrow at that reply.

「—What is the meaning of this? Wasn't it you who said that if it's them then they will happily come attacking?」

The indescribable aura that Olivia emitted made Marquis Frampton's eyes to dart around.

「No, they—」

「It doesn't matter what is your excuse. Make the principality attack the kingdom. With that you will be able to deal with them together with your political enemy.」

Marquis Frampton's political enemy—that was Duke Redgrave.

The duke's faction that gathered around Julius as their banner was currently losing a lot of strength.

If they were made to be even more exhausted here, then Marquis Frampton wouldn't have any more enemy.

「I just need to make the principality move right?」

「That's right. Don't forget to cause a commotion within the country too. Then your faction will be the one to take care of it.」

Olivia's plan was to cause a commotion within the country and then Marquis Frampton would suppress the commotion.

The principality would move at that timing. Duke Redgrave would have to be the one to clash with them instead of Marquis Frampton, exhausting his strength even further.

「—Let's lit a fire under those principality bunch's bottom.」

「I'll leave it to you. —Now then, it will be fun from here on.」

Olivia chuckled.

(I'll corner this country until the end of the earth. After all it's impossible for all of you who stole Liia's country to rule over this land forever.)

.



## Part 15

At the principality around that time.

「Onee-sama, please listen to me!」

Hertrauda and Hertrude were walking in the palace's corridor with fast pace.

Hertrauda was chasing after Hertrude who was walking ahead.

Hertrauda was desperately pleading at her big sister Hertrude.

「There are too many things that we don't know. The principality—」

「—Rauda, I don't want to listen to your story. I never heard anything about the principality doing any act of barbarity toward the kingdom in the past.」

「Onee-sama, please listen to me. I beg you. At this rate we will really commit a mistake that cannot be taken back!」

Recently recruitment of soldiers was carried out even more intensely in the principality with the pro-war faction at the center of it.

It was in order to attack the kingdom.

When Hertrude started walking, Hertrauda would chase after her.

「Just once is fine. Onee-sama, listen to what I have to say just once—」

「I'm already tired of listening to you.」

「—Onee-sama」

Hertrauda stopped walking and casted her gaze down. Hertrude also stopped walking.

Hertrude talked about what would happen with her back still turned on Hertrauda.

「Rauda, I can't take you to the battlefield as you are right now.」

「Eh? Why? The magic flutes have been stolen! Then why does Onee-sama still need to go the battlefield!?」

There wasn't any meaning in taking out the principality's princesses to the battlefield now that the magic flutes were gone.

Rather they would only become a hindrance, and yet Hertrude was planning to head to the battlefield.

「Even without the magic flutes, I will head to the battlefield as the banner of the war against the kingdom. Besides, it looks like the kingdom is busy with internal discord right now. One faction there is thinking to make use of us to bury their political enemy. —Those people are really beyond help. Are you still thinking that the fault lies with the principality after hearing this?」

「Th—that's—but, this and that are different story! Besides, it's dangerous to just believe the kingdom's offer so one-sidedly like that!」

「We don't believe them or anything. But, this is a chance. The principality will be able to secure a territory in the mainland. —Using that territory as the foothold, we will be able to whittle down the kingdom. The principality will be at the taking side this time.」

Hertrauda recalled the scene that she read in the book.

The same thing like the past—the time where the principality was ransacking the kingdom's territory was going to happen again.

「Onee-sama, please rethink it. Without the magic flutes, the principality's national power won't be able to win against the kingdom.」

They didn't have any trump card.

Even so the principality wouldn't stop.

「—Rauda, you stay behind in the palace.」

Hertrude left.

.

## Part 16

In a certain place within the principality.

Count Garrett and a secret messenger from the kingdom were having a secret meeting.

「Hm~ph, and?」

Garrett received the leather bag that was stuffed with golden coin from the messenger.

He also accepted other things like artwork and the like.

「We don't mind if you seriously strike at the kingdom's first line of defense. After all we won't head to the battlefield right away.」

「Causing a war in order to defeat the opposing faction, the kingdom's people are really horrible.」

Although he said that, in front of the artworks Garret twirled the moustache was proud of.

「Very well! I'll do something about the principality. We just need to fiercely battle the first line of defense before giving some ground to the second line of defense and withdrawing isn't it?」

「We'll be counting on you, Count Garrett.」

「Leave it to me. Also, just in case something happen—」

「—Please rest assured. Just in case something happened with the principality, we will welcome you anytime. We promise to prepare an even better reception than now at that time.」

「I'll be counting on you.」

Garrett wished to defect to the kingdom by himself in case the principality was defeated.

(There won't be any problem for me no matter which side win. The true tactician will obtain triumph whether in victory or defeat.)

For Garret, any victory was fine as long as he was the victor.

.

## Part 17

I was busy with various things but today I was called by Nix.

According to Nix, 「Show up sometimes. —There are a lot of things I want to say to you」 he said.

I came to the castle Nix obtained for dinner.

Well, this was like a dinner party that invited relative, but I was prepared to listen to Nix nagging at me with snide remarks.

Even I was feeling responsible for his situation, so I intended to at least listen to his snide remarks.

I would only listen though.

And so I and Marie intruded at the castle of the former Count Offley—which was the love nest of Nix and Dorothea-oneesan right now. There we enjoyed dinner.

However, originally I should be listening to Nix's snide remarks here but—.

「Haha~, it was really tough. If there wasn't a forest nearby, then I wouldn't be able to obtain food.」

—Nix was covering his eyes with his right hand while listening to Marie's story.

He was crying while sobbing.

Dorothea-oneesan also made a serious face and asked Marie.

「—You were eating weed in that forest?」

Marie tilted her head with a confused look.

「No, I didn't eat weed or the like. Even plant each has their own name, and some of them are edible. But they aren't tasty. They are

edible, but in the book it was written that they aren't suitable to be used as food.]

I was also at a loss for words.

At first the topic was about the territory of Offley House, after that it became the topic of Marie's family. Then the talk moved to the treatment of Marie's family to her—it ended up becoming a talk of how Marie had lived before.

Dorothea-oneesan who was exasperated with Nix's snide remarks acted tactfully and brought up this topic.

But she never expected that this topic would be a landmine like this.

「But, the tastiest is squirrel.」

「Squirrel!? Y-you mean, that adorable animal!?」

Dorothea-oneesan was shocked.

Nix and I was also the same.

「It made me felt a bit happy when finding one. Because, it was a precious source of protein.」

This girl, she was only seeing a source of protein even when she saw a cute animal, she was lying right!?

But, Marie's story didn't end here.

「Animal skin can be sold, so I could be brand new secondhand clothing using that money. But, I went through scary things many times in the forest. Animals like boar or bear are absurdly strong. Sometimes I would even need half a day to defeat them.」

D-defeating boar and bear—she said!?

I somehow guessed the reason of why Marie's fist was so heavy.

Let's confirm it just in case.

「You, you really once fought boar and bear?」

Marie said 「There is no way I'd do something like that」 , even so

「As expected there is no way I can win against that kind of animal when they are in perfect health, so I aimed at animals that had gotten into a trap. Even so, it took half a day to defeat them. But, the meat after that hard work was delicious~. Their skin could also be sold after that, so it's double delicious. I had a complete set of brand new second hand clothing.」

What kind of thing is brand new second hand clothing huh!?

You couldn't call a second hand clothing brand new!

Dorothea-oneesan pressed her hand on her mouth. She gestured at the servant who was waiting on our table to come near.

She was already dripping with tears!? To make Dorothea-oneesan crying like this, just how tragic this story was!?

「M-madam, what do you need?」

The servants were also really put off by the story. Some of them were also crying.

「Grill some meat for Marie-chan.」

Marie was rejoicing but also embarrassed hearing that.

「Is that alright!? Haha~, I'm sorry if it feels like I'm pressing Oneesan for that~」

When I looked at Marie's plate, the food on it was already cleaned up.

*Am I making them thinking that I still haven't eaten enough because I finished eating too quickly—Marie must be having such misunderstanding.*

That ain't it! It's because of your story just now!

Nix stood up and walked toward me. Then he placed both his hands on my shoulders.

「Leon!」

「W-what?」

「There are a lot of things that I want to say to you, I also want to punch you. Honestly, I was planning to punch you today.」

Isn't that horrible? Even though I had made Nix to be a count.

「But—but, I'll swallow this resentment.」

「O-ou?」

「That's why at least, you have to make this girl happy. You get it, make her happy no matter what!」

Y—you don't need to tell me that, even I wouldn't drive Marie to a corner even more than this.

I couldn't drive her to a corner, or rather—Marie was tougher and also stronger than I imagined. I somehow understood the reason for that.

Marie was more like a feral child than I thought, she was sturdy.

Even though she had a delicate appearance, this girl was a tough gal.

He was one tough person, at the level like the general of Sengoku period.

Marie's eyes brightened when the steak was brought in.

「Uwa~i. I'm digging in~!」

Dorothea-oneesan wiped her tears.

「Eat a lot okay?」

I watched Marie eating happily while getting scared to know just how much darkness there was in this girl's past.

I swore in my heart that I wouldn't talk about the past in front of Marie.

After all she was also killed by domestic violence in her past life.

Just what had happened for a woman this unfortunate to be created?

Perhaps this girl was really cursed?

We were shedding tears while watching Marie enjoying the meal.

Then—a servant ran into the dining room in panic.

Seeing the servant's state, Nix sensed that it was something alarming.

He didn't rebuke the servant's rudeness.

「What happened?」

「I-it's awful. There is report that insurrections are occurring everywhere!」

「—What did you say?」

It seemed that insurrections happened everywhere within the kingdom at the same time.

But if I had to say, that was suspicious.

We still didn't know the detail of the nobles that were rebelling, but in this Hohlfahrt Kingdom insurrection rarely happened, or rather it was difficult to revolt.

The feudal lord nobles didn't have that much spare power to rise in revolt. They also knew just how strong the kingdom's national power was, so they wouldn't dare to.

In the first place, they would avoid a battle where they had no hope of victory.

Even if they revolted due to things like stubbornness or pride, for multiple insurrections to happen simultaneously—it was weighing my mind.

If they were planning until this far, than there should be information about it leaking out from somewhere.

Then if it weren't nobles that were revolting, was it the commoners?

However, although Hohlfahrt Kingdom was really harsh to a part of the nobility, this country was relatively kind to the commoners.

Then if it wasn't the nobles or the commoners, was this caused by some kind of organization?

I didn't know the answer, but there was just one thing that was on my mind.

I recalled that in the game, the pirates were rampaging around this time.

The kingdom still fell into turmoil even after we defeated the pirates and stole the principality's trump card?

Was this the thing called 'corrective force' at work?

「—This is the worst.」

No one was puzzled by my muttering.

Nix and Dorothea-oneesan left the dining room.

Marie looked troubled.

「Eh? Th-this, what should we do? I still haven't finished eating though!？」

「You—no, it's alright. Just eat slowly. We won't be able to do anything anyway right now.」

Marie resumed eating. She was also kept sending me glances.

「Leon, you still cannot contact Luxion?」

「—That guy, just what is he doing at this important time.」

Right now Luxion wasn't here because he said that he had a business.

He said that it was a business that he couldn't delay no matter what, so I sent him off but—I should keep Luxion beside me if I knew this would happen.

.

## Part 18

(TN: Warning, from here it will be a spoiler for the WN and the LN too. The character and the country here are from the third sequel of the otome game, they only appeared at the late stage of the WN, while the LN has only just reached the second sequel. Those who haven't read the WN until the ending, don't read further if you don't want to be spoiled)

In a continent where the holy magic empire was located.

There was a girl living in the low-lying part of the imperial capital there.

「Heave-ho」

The girl finished her work and stretched her body. And then she looked up at the sky.

「Today's weather is also nice~」

The girl's name was Mia(ミア).

She was a commoner who was living in the imperial capital.

She looked up to the sky during her break time and grinned cheerfully seeing that today's weather was also nice.

Then she saw a streak of light.

「Eh?」

A streak of light ran vertically at the sky, and then it vanished.

Just what had happened?

While she was thinking that, even though until just now there wasn't really any wind blowing—a gust of wind suddenly blew.

「Wawa!？」

She pushed down her disarrayed hair and hid behind a building to wait for the wind to pass.

The wind blew away the bucket that was just lying around there. When she looked up to the sky, there were trashes flying around.

The wind was gone after a while and Mia looked around.

The residences of the capital around her were bewildered by the gust of wind just now.

「What was that just now?」

「Who knows?」

「Forget about that, wasn't there a light at the sky?」

Mia also thought about the gust of wind just now, but she returned to her work because she couldn't find any answer.

.

## Part 19

Luxion's main body was floating in the sky.

His location was near a continent where a country that was called an empire was existing.

Luxion confirmed the situation from inside the ship.

〔—Confirming the information from the reconnaissance plane. Complete destruction of Arcadia(アルカディア) is confirmed. It was surprising that it hadn't stopped functioning.〕

Sleeping at the bottom of the sea was the flying fortress called Arcadia, the ultimate weapon of the new mankind.

Luxion discovered it and he left Leon's side in order to destroy it.

〔Three should be the weapons left behind by the new mankind sleeping all over the world. This planet will become a dead planet again if all of them aren't destroyed.〕

Luxion was created as a migration ship, but in this current era there was nothing that could match him.

Now that he had just destroyed Arcadia completely, he judged that there would be little to fear from the weapons of the new mankind.

〔I'll destroy everything. —Yes, I'll destroy everything and return this world to its ideal form. So that one day there won't be any problem even if the old mankind return, this world should return to the form it ought to be—〕

The old mankind that boarded migration ships like him and departed from this planet.

There was a possibility that they might return here again.

To prepare for such possibility, he believed that he should take back this planet for the sake of the old mankind.

Luxion started taking action in order to search for the next target.

『That's right. Next is—』

.

## Part 20

(TN: You LN reader and perhaps even some WN reader might get confused by the part below. This is the continuation of the skits that appear at the end of each chapter of the WN. And sadly you might not be able to find them in the WN anymore. I think the author deleted those skits after some time passed.)

Sapling-chan(° ∀°) 「I am everyone's idol, Sapling-chan! I appeared in this novel as the sapling of the sacred tree!」

Sapling-chan( ° д °) 「Eh? The story is reaching the good part and I'm being a hindrance?」

Sapling-chan( ° д °) 「.....」

Sapling-chan( ° 言 °)、ペツ 「I'm the one getting hindered here! What's this. Just what's this! What's this Marie route!?!」

Sapling-chan( ` Д'#/ ) 「Actually the extra story from the questionnaire of the fourth volume should have me as the leading actress! And yet everyone was asking, give us Marie route~, like that!」

Sapling-chan(# ° Д°) 「My turns has always gotten stolen until now! That's a big problem! I'm the idol at the WN you know!? The angel who came out at the afterward! So what's with this treatment? What's this!?!」

Sapling-chan( ` Д'#/ ) 「Actually I should have some lines in the LN too! But then the editor in charge said 『It's not needed』！」

Sapling-chan(# ° Д°) 「Give me back my turnsssss!!」

Sapling-chan( ; ° Д°) 「Fuu~, it feels refreshing after saying what I want to say. Even though in my plan I should appear at the SS of the fourth volume's questionnaire and also become the idol in the LN

too, the reality is this horrible. Even though I should also appear in the drama CD too using that popularity.]

Sapling-chan。°(°Д`°)°。『Horrible! This is too much! Everyone also want to hear my voice aren't you? Aren't you!?】

Luxion (●) 『—』

Creare(クレアーレ) (o) 『—』

Luxion (●) 『So this plant finally start to spread into the LN too.】

Creare (o) 『She is like the perennial plant green monster. She is a troublesome fellow who is spreading and entangling to everywhere.】

Luxion (●) 『Aren't you being impolite to arrowroot genus of pea family saying that?】

Creare (o) 『Oh no. How impolite of me. I'll apologize right away. I'm sorry.】

Sapling-chan(#°Д°) 『—What's this? Hey, what's this? Why are even you two are coming out in this place? This place right now is my solo stage though?】

Luxion (●) 『No, we're thinking that perhaps we should give additional explanation for readers who don't know about the WN.】

Creare (o) 『It'll be unpleasant if false fact that you're our idol is spreading after all. In the first place, isn't our mascot idol right now Marie-chan? Ange-chan is also popular with how gallant she is though.】

Creare (o) 『Hey, do you know? Marie-chan is the first place in the popularity ranking for the fourth volume. Master is the first place

from the cumulative total of first volume until fourth volume though, isn't this amazing?』

Luxion (●) 『I'm feeling really amazed instead that master can be in the first place for the first volume until the third volume though. It's amazing that he could continue staying at the first place with that personality.』

Creare (o ) 『Master is really popular isn't he』

Sapling-chan( ; °Д° ) 「Wait. What about me? What about my popularity? Everyone, you gave your vote for me right? Right-!?」

Creare ( o) 『Well, let's put aside the talk about popularity ranking. If you're a reader who are reading this SS, then surely you have also filled the questionnaire right? Does everyone has your own favorite character?』

Sapling-chan(# °Д° ) 「You two, how long are you planning to stay here!」

Luxion ( ●) 『Also, this plant isn't popular or anything at the WN. She even got a storm of 『oie』 comment at the comment section. The reason is because how annoying she is.』

Sapling-chan(`Д'#/ ) 「D-don't screw with me! Sometimes I'd also get praised 'Great job!' you know! I played a great role there!」

Creare (o ) 『All the comments other than that were about how annoying you are though. Even so, you really came spreading into the LN. I respect that guts of yours at the very least.

Sapling-chan(# ° 言° ) 「I absolutely won't give up. I'll show up next time too and become the idol of the questionnaire bonus chapter. I was really excited to make my entrance from the fourth volume. But everything is messed up because of Marie-chan's fault! Give me back my popularity!」

Luxion (●) 『There isn't any popularity that can be given back. More importantly, if the readers who read the LN learned that the sacred tree's sapling has this kind of personality, won't they receive a great shock?』

Sapling-chan ( ; ° Δ° ) 「—You, aren't your words horrible? Do you need to go that far?」

Luxion (●) 『As I thought, it's an excellent decision to remove this thing's lines from the LN. Because the readers will be able to maintain the image of lovable plant as long as they don't read her lines here in the questionnaire's SS.』

Creare ( o ) 『This time too she butt in just when the story was getting good, so hasn't her image turned to be the worst now? I'm looking forward whether she can recover or not from this. —Well, it'll be impossible though.』

Sapling-chan(#° Δ° ) 「Don't underestimate my cuteness! The voices demanding for sapling-chan's corner will be a lot more than the demand for Marie route! I won't let anyone get in the way of my dream to develop a super lengthy tale in this questionnaire SS!」

Luxion ( ●) 『You're planning something like that?』

Creare (o ) 『Won't it be difficult for a plant to be the leading actress? Ah, more importantly Marie route finally reached the third part. When it came to word count, the first part was 10000 words. The second part was 20000 words. Then the third part is around 15000 words? This, is the amount of one volume no matter how you look at it isn't it?』

Luxion ( ●) 『Having extra story with length that reached a single volume is really a good bargain isn't it? This is what they called a good buy. It's like getting one free book if you buy three books.』

Creare (o) 『It won't even be surprising if one day one more volume of extra story is prepared as special perk. At that time I wish that the story of Aaron(アーロン)-chan will get written by all means. Surely it will be interesting. After all it's a relatively important story.』

Creare ( o) 『Setting that aside, Luxion. What are you going to do after this? What are you thinking in this Marie route? I'm super curious. Also, when will my turn come in Marie route?』

Luxion ( ●) 『It's a secret. Also, you won't have any turn.』

Creare (#o) 『■■■■■■■■■■■■■■■■■■!!』

※Swear words that are unbearable to hear

Luxion (●) 『Those who are curious with the continuation, please buy the sixth volume. Because next time it will surely be Marie route again.』

Sapling-chanΣ(°Д°) 「What about my turn!?」

## **Credits**

Translation Group :bakapervert

EPUB is done by JLN

*Download all your fav Light Novels at*

Just Light Novels